



UNIVERSITY  
OF PITTSBURGH



LIBRARY















Dar  
F1036  
N935  
V. 17  
cop. 1

"The care which a nation devotes to the preservation of the monuments of its past may serve as a true measure of the degree of civilization to which it has attained."

(*Les Archives Principales de Moscou du Ministère des Affaires Etrangères* Moscow, 1898, p. 3.)

"To discover and rescue from the unsparing hand of time the records which yet remain of the earliest history of Canada. To preserve while in our power, such documents as may be found amid the dust of yet unexplored depositories, and which may prove important to general history, and to the particular history of this province."—*Quebec Literary and Historical Society.*

## NATIONAL MONUMENTS.

(By Henry Van Dyke).

Count not the cost of honour to the dead!  
The tribute that a mighty nation pays  
To those who loved her well in former days  
Means more than gratitude for glory fled;  
For every noble man that she hath bred,  
Immortalized by art's immortal praise,  
Lives in the bronze and marble that we raise,  
To lead our sons as he our fathers led.  
These monuments of manhood, brave and high,  
Do more than forts or battle-ships to keep  
Our dear bought liberty. They fortify  
The heart of youth with valour wise and deep;  
They build eternal bulwarks, and command  
Eternal strength to guard our native land.



## CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Title Page,	i
Contents,	iii
Objects of Collections,	v
Act of Incorporation,	vii
Act Amalgamating Collections, Management, etc.,	viii
Rules and By-laws,	ix
Officers and Members,—1913,	xi
List of Presidents,—1878-1913,	xv
List of Vice Presidents,—1878-1913,	xvi
Council,—1878-1913,	xvii
President's Address.	1
Papers,	
Memoir of the Life of the Honourable William Blowers Bliss, with portraits, by Hon. Sir Charles J. Townshend.	23
Notes on Thomas Williams of Annapolis Royal, with portraits, by James D. Ritchie.	47
A Short Note on the Yarmouth "Runic Stone," by Moses H. Nickerson with Illustrations.	51
Remarks on the Fletcher and Related Stones of Yarmouth, N. S., by Harry Piers.	53
The Fenwick Family in Nova Scotia, by Colonel G. C. Fenwick, Indian Army (retired.)	57
The Militia of Nova Scotia, 1749-1867, with por- traits, by Major Joseph Plimsoll Edwards.	63
Early Reminiscences of Halifax, by Peter Lynch, Q. C.	111
"A Sketch of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, a Member of the House of Assembly in the Thirties and Forties," with portraits, by George Mullane.	151
Notes on Several Governors and Their Influence, by Joseph Howe.	197
Statement Relative to the Introduction and History of Responsible Government in Nova Scotia, by Rev. E. M. Saunders, D. D.	199
Centennial Number of "Acadian Recorder," with portraits.	203
List of Donors to N. S. Historical Society.	204
Papers read before the Society, 1878-1913	207
Index,	215
Collections of Nova Scotia Historical Society, Vols. I to XVII, List of	220

12-24-48 Delroy



## OBJECTS OF COLLECTIONS.

1. Manuscript statements and narratives of pioneer settlers, old letters and journals relative to the early history and settlement of Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, Newfoundland and Prince Edward Island, and the wars of 1776 and 1812; biographical notes of our Indian tribes, their history, characteristics, sketches of their prominent chiefs, and warriors, together with contributions of Indian implements, dress, ornaments and curiosities.

2. Diaries, narratives and documents relative to the Loyalists, their expulsion from the old colonies and their settlement in the Maritime Provinces.

3. Files of newspapers, books, pamphlets, college catalogues, minutes of ecclesiastical conventions, associations, conferences and synods, and all other publications, relating to this Province, New Brunswick, Prince Edward Island and Newfoundland.

4. Drawings and descriptions of our ancient mounds and fortifications, their size, representation and locality.

5. Information respecting articles of pre-historic antiquities, especially implements of copper, stone, or ancient coins or other curiosities found in any of the Maritime Provinces, together with the locality and condition of their discovery. The contribution of all such articles to the cabinet of the society is most earnestly desired.

6. Indian geographical names of streams and localities, with their signification, and all information generally respecting the condition, language and history of the Micmacs, Malicetes and Bethucks.

7. Books of all kinds, especially such as relate to Canadian history, travel, and biography in general, and Lower Canada or Quebec in particular, family genealogies, old magazines, pamphlets, files of newspapers, maps, historical manuscripts, autographs of distinguished persons, coins, medals, paintings, portraits, statuary and engravings.

8. We solicit from historical societies and other learned bodies that interchange of books and other materials by which the usefulness of institutions of this nature is so essentially enhanced,—pledging ourselves to repay such contributions by acts in kind to the best of our ability.

9. The Society particularly begs the favor and compliments of authors and publishers, to present, with their autographs, copies of their respective works for its library.

10. Editors and publishers of newspapers, magazines and reviews, will confer a lasting favor on the Society by contributing their publications regularly for its library, where they may be expected to be found always on file and carefully preserved. We aim to obtain and preserve for those who shall come after us a perfect copy of every book, pamphlet or paper ever printed in or about Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, Prince Edward Island and Newfoundland.

11. Nova Scotians residing abroad have it in their power to render their native province great service by making donations to our library of books, pamphlets, manuscripts, etc., bearing on any of the Provinces of the Dominion or Newfoundland. To the relatives, descendants, etc., of our colonial governors, judges and military officers, we especially appeal on behalf of our Society for all papers, books, pamphlets, letters, etc., which may throw light on the history of any of the Provinces of the Dominion.

## ACT OF INCORPORATION.

---

### CHAPTER 87.

#### SECTION.

1. Incorporation.
2. May hold real estate.

#### SECTION.

3. Property vested in corporation.

An Act to incorporate the Nova Scotia Historical Society.

(Passed the 17th day of April, A. D., 1879).

Be it enacted by the Governor, Council, and Assembly, as follows:

1. The Honourable John W. Ritchie, the Reverend George W. Hill, the Reverend Thomas J. Daly, the Honourable William J. Almon, Thomas A. Ritchie, William D. Harrington, George E. Morton, and John T. Bulmer, and their associates, members of the Nova Scotia Historical Society, and such other persons as shall become members of such society, according to the rules and by-laws thereof, are hereby created a body corporate by the name of the Nova Scotia Historical Society.

2. The said corporation may purchase, take, hold, and enjoy real estate not exceeding twenty thousand dollars in value, and may sell, mortgage, lease, or otherwise dispose of the same for the benefit of the corporation.

3. Upon the passing of this act the property of the said Nova Scotia Historical Society, whether real or personal, and all debts due thereto, shall vest in the said Nova Scotia Historical Society hereby incorporated.

## AN ACT.

To provide for the Amalgamation of the Library of the Nova Scotia Historical Society with the Legislative Library and the Management of the Joint Collection.

(Passed the 10th day of April, A. D., 1831.)

Be it enacted by the Governor, Council, and Assembly as follows:

1. The Library of the Nova Scotia Historical Society shall be amalgamated with the Legislative Library of Nova Scotia, and the regulation and management of the Joint Collection and any additions that may be made thereto is hereby vested in a commission of nine persons to be called the Nova Scotia Library Commission, of whom the Lieutenant-Governor of the Province for the time being shall *ex officio* be one, and the remainder of whom shall be appointed annually, one half by the Nova Scotia Historical Society and the other half by the Governor in Council.

2. The Lieutenant-Governor for the time being shall be *ex officio* the President of the Commission.

3. Should the Nova Scotia Historical Society at any time fail to appoint any or all of the Commissioners whom said Society are hereby authorized to appoint, the rights and powers vested by this Act in the Commission shall devolve upon the other members of the Commission.

4. The Librarian shall be appointed by the Governor in Council, and shall be such person as the Commissioners shall nominate, and shall hold office during good behaviour.

5. The Commissioners may make bye-laws from time to time for the regulation and management of the Library and prescribing all matters necessary for the control thereof, but such bye-laws shall not go into force until approved by the Governor in Council.

6. The Commission shall make an annual report of the expenditure, the general state of the Library, and on all such matters in connection therewith as may be required by the Governor in Council, which report shall be laid upon the table of each branch of the Legislature during the session.

# RULES AND BY-LAWS.

REVISED MAY 27, 1910.

1. The Society shall be called the Nova Scotia Historical Society.

## OBJECTS.

2. The objects of the Society shall be the collection and preservation of all documents, papers and others objects of interest which may serve to throw light upon and illustrate the history of this country, the reading at the meetings of the Society, of papers on historical subjects, the publication, as far as the funds of the Society will allow, of all such documents and papers as it may be deemed desirable to publish, the formation of a library of books, papers and manuscripts, affording information, and illustrating historical subjects.

## MEMBERS.

3. The membership shall consist of Ordinary, Life, Corresponding and Honorary Members. The Ordinary or resident members, shall pay at the time of admission, an entrance fee of Five Dollars, and Two Dollars after each succeeding annual meeting. The Ordinary Members residing outside the limit of 15 miles from the city, may become members on payment of Two Dollars entrance fee, and One Dollar annually thereafter. Any Ordinary Member may become a Life Member by the payment of Forty Dollars. The Corresponding and Honorary Members, shall be elected by the unanimous vote of the Society, and are exempt from all dues.

4. Candidates for membership may be proposed at any regular or special meeting of the Society by a Member. The proposition shall remain on the table for one month, or until the next meeting, when a ballot shall be taken, one black ball in five excluding. No person shall be considered a member until his entrance fee is paid, and if any member shall allow his dues to remain unpaid for two years, his name may be struck from the roll.

## MEETINGS, OFFICE-BEARERS, ETC.

5. The regular meetings of the Society shall be held at 8 p. m., on the first Friday of each month, from November to May, both months inclusive, and special meetings may be convened on due notification of the President, or in case of his absence, by the Vice-President, or on the application of any five members.

6. The annual meeting of the Society shall be held at 8 p. m., on the first Friday of April, at which meeting there shall be chosen a President, three Vice-Presidents, a Corresponding Secretary, a Recording Secretary, a Treasurer, and two Auditors, and a Council of four members, who with the foregoing shall constitute the Council of the Society. The election of members to serve on the Nova Scotia Library Commission, under the provisions of Chapter 17, N. S. Acts of 1880, shall take place at the annual meeting, immediately after the election of office-bearers and Council.

7. All communications which are thought worthy of preservation, shall be minuted in the books of the Society and the originals kept on file.

8. Seven members shall be a quorum for all purposes at ordinary meetings, but at the annual meeting, in April, ten members shall form a quorum.

9. No article of the constitution nor any by-law shall be altered at any meeting when less than ten members are present, nor unless the subject has either been discussed at the previous meeting, or reported on by a committee appointed for that purpose.

10. The duties of the Office bearers and Council shall be the same as those performed generally in other Societies.

11. The Publication Committee shall consist of four members and shall be appointed by the Council, to them all manuscripts shall be referred, and they shall report to the Council before publication.

## ELECTION OF OFFICERS.

12. All elections of officers shall be made by ballot, and a majority of those present shall be required to elect.

OFFICERS AND MEMBERS

OF THE

NOVA SCOTIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY

1913.

---

PRESIDENT.

Ven. Archdeacon Armitage, M. A., Ph. D.

VICE-PRESIDENTS.

David Allison, LL. D.                      Major J. Plimsoll Edwards.  
J. A. Chisholm, K. C.

CORRESPONDING SECRETARY.

Harry Piers.

RECORDING SECRETARY.

William L. Payzant, M. A., LL. B.

TREASURER.

George E. Nichols, LL. B.

AUDITORS.

W. L. Brown,                                      Lt.-Col. F. H. Oxley.

OTHER MEMBERS OF COUNCIL.

The Hon. Mr. Justice Russell.              A. H. Buckley, Ph. M.  
George W. T. Irving,                              W. C. Milner.

LIBRARY COMMISSIONERS.

James S. MacDonald,                              John J. Power, D. C. L.  
Harry Piers,    A. H. McKay. LL. D.

LIBRARIAN OF SOCIETY, AND OF AKINS LIBRARY.

Miss Annie Donahoe.

## THE TREASURER'S LIST OF MEMBERS

who have qualified by paying their entrance fees as required by Nos. 3 and 4 of the Rules and By-Laws.

- Abbott, Very Rev. H. P. A., (Hamilton, Ont.)  
 Allison, David, LL. D.  
 Allison, J. Walter  
 Archibald, L. B., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Almon, Dr. W. Bruce  
 Archibald, Charles  
 Archibald, Mrs. Charles  
 Archibald, R. C., Wolfville, N. S.  
 Armitage, Ven. Archdeacon, Ph. D.  
 Armstrong, F. W., (Glace Bay, C. B.)  
 Armstrong, Hon. J. N., K. C., M. L. C.,  
 (N. Sydney, C. B.)  
 Baird, Rev. Frank, (Woodstock, N. B.)  
 Baker, G. Prescott, (Yarmouth, N. S.)  
 Barnes, H. W.  
 Barss, Wm. L., (Dartmouth, N. S.)  
 Bent, Barry D., (Amherst, N. S.)  
 Bill, Charles R., (Wolfville, N. S.)  
 Bill, J. Philip W., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Bissett, Dr. M. P. P.,  
 Bell, Hon. Senator, A. C., (New Glasgow,  
 N. S.)  
 Bell, Charles  
 Bissett, F. W.  
 Bernasconi, G. A., (N. Sydney, C. B.)  
 Black, W. A., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Bond, Rev. Geo. J., D. D.  
 Borden, Hon. Sir F. W., K. C. M. G.,  
 (Ottawa, Ont.)  
 Borden, Rt. Hon. R. L., K. C., D. C. L.,  
 (Ottawa, Ont.)  
 Bourinot, John C., (Port Hawkesbury, N.S.)  
 Boutillier, Arthur, (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Bowes, F. W.  
 Brown, Richard H.  
 Brown, Wm. L.  
 Browne, Rev. P. W., (St. Jaques, N. F.)  
 Browne, Rev. J. D. H., (Santa Monica,  
 Cal.)  
 Bryden, Rev. C. W., (Westawasis, Sask.)  
 Buchanan, G. O., (Vancouver, B. C.)  
 Buckley, A. H.  
 Burchell, C. J., K. C.  
 Burpee, L. R., (Ottawa, Ont.)  
 Cahan, C. H., K. C., (Montreal, Q.)  
 Calkin, Hugh E., (Londonderry, N. S.)  
 Cantley, Thos., (New Glasgow, N. S.)  
 Cameron, H. W.  
 Campbell, A. J., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Campbell, Dr. D. A.  
 Campbell, Dr. Geo. M.  
 Campbell, Geo. S.  
 Carter, R. S., (Maccan, N. S.)  
 Chesley, A. E. H., (Kentville, N. S.)  
 Chesley, Judge S. A., K. C., (Lunen-  
 burg, N. S.)  
 Chisholm, J. A., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Chisholm, Dr. Murdoch  
 Christie, Loring C., (Washington.)  
 Chute, Rev. A. C., D. D., (Wolfville, N.S.)  
 Clarke, Willard G., (Bear River, N. S.)  
 Clayton, W. J.  
 Cobb, A. R.  
 Cohoe, Rev. A. B., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Congdon, Fredk. T., Toronto, Ont.  
 Cowie, Dr. A. J., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Cox, Rob., M. D., (Upper Stewiacke, N. S.)  
 Cox, Miss Mary E., (Shelburne, N. S.)  
 Creelman, A. R., K. C., (Montreal, Q.)  
 Crowe, Walter, K. C., (Sydney, C. B.)  
 Crowe, Harry J., (Toronto, Ont.)  
 Crowe, Geo. R., (Winnipeg, Man.)  
 Crowell, Rev. Edwin, (Truro, N. S.)  
 Crisp, Rev. J. O., (Portsmouth, Ont.)  
 Curry, J. M., (Amherst, N. S.)  
 Cutten, Rev. Geo. B., D. D., (Wolfville, N.S.)  
 Dawson, Mrs., (Montreal, P. Q.)  
 Dawson, Robert, (Bridgewater, N. S.)  
 Daniels, Hon. O. T., K. C., M. P. P.  
 Davidson, A. L., M. P., (Middleton, N. S.)  
 Davison, Frank, (Bridgewater, N. S.)  
 DesBarres, Rev. F. W. W., (Sackville, N.B.)  
 DeCarteret, Capt. W. S.  
 Dennis, Senator Wm.  
 Densmore, Dr. L. D., (Sherbrooke, N. S.)  
 Dickie, Alfred, (Stewiacke, N. S.)  
 Dimock, W. D., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Doane, H. L., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Donaldson, Rev. L. J., M. A., (Halifax  
 N. S.)  
 Douglas, John C., M. P. P., (Glace Bay)  
 Doull, Very Rev. A. J., (Victoria, B. C.)  
 Drury, Major Gen., C. B.  
 Drysdale, Hon. Mr. Justice, (Halifax, N.S.)  
 Dumaresq, S. P.  
 Dustan, J. F. Rev., (Bridgewater, N. S.)  
 Eagar, W. H., M. D., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Eaton, B. H., K. C.  
 Edwards, Major J. P., (Londonderry, N. S.)  
 Elliot, Dr. C. S., (Stellarton, N. S.)  
 Ellis, Hon. Dr. J. F., M. P. P., (Sher-  
 brooke, N. S.)  
 Falconer, Rev. Prof.  
 Farish, Dr. Geo. T., (Yarmouth, N. S.)  
 Faulkner, Hon. Geo. E., M. P. P.  
 Faulkner, Prof. J. A., (Madison, N. J.)  
 Fenerty, E. Lawson  
 Ferguson, Wm. McM., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Fergie, Chas. M. E., (Montreal, P. Q.)  
 Fielding, Hon. W. S., D. C. L., (Ottawa,  
 Ont.)  
 Fleming, Sir Sandford  
 Flint, Thos. B., LL. D., (Ottawa, Ont.)  
 Fogo, Fred. C., (Pictou, N. S.)  
 Forrester, Rev. John, D. D.  
 Francis, Thos. H.  
 Frame, Joseph F., (Regina, Sask.)  
 Francklyn, Geo. E.  
 Fraser, Rev. W. M., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Fraser, Dr. C. F., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Fraser, Mrs. D. C., (New Glasgow, N. S.)  
 Fraser, A. S. M., (New Glasgow, N. S.)  
 Gillis, Rev. D. C., Ph. D., (Antigonish,  
 N. S.)  
 Gilpin, Edwin L., (Sydney, N. S.)  
 Gisborne, F. H., (Ottawa, Ont.)  
 Gordon, Rev. Principal D. M., D. D.,  
 (Kingston, Ont.)  
 Gorham, J. W., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Grant, M. C. Mrs., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Harival, S. J.  
 Harris, Prof. David Fraser, M. D., D. Sc.,  
 Harris, Robt. E., K. C., D. C. L.  
 Harrison, Major H. J., (Maccan)

- Hart, Miss L. H., (India.)  
 Harvey, W. C.  
 Haslam, Mrs. H. Leo., (Liverpool, N. S.)  
 Hattie, R. M.  
 Hattie, Dr. W. H.  
 Hebb, Willis E.  
 Hemeon, Rev. D., (Hamilton, Bermuda.)  
 Henderson, Geo.  
 Hendry, A. W., (Liverpool.)  
 Hetherrington, J. L., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Hewitt, H. W., (Saskatoon, Sask.)  
 Hill, Rev. A. M., D. D., (Yarmouth, N. S.)  
 Hill, Arthur E. B., (Vancouver.)  
 Hill, Albert J., (New Westminster.)  
 Howe, Sydenham, (Middleton, N. S.)  
 Hoyles, N. W., K. C., D. C. L., (Toronto, Ont.)  
 Hunt, Dr. J. J., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Irvine, J. A., (Calgary, Alta.)  
 Irvin, John, K. C., (Bridgetown, N. S.)  
 Irving, Geo. W. T.  
 Jack, A. M.  
 Jack, Rev. T. C., D. D., (N. Sydney, C. B.)  
 James, Rev. Willis G., (Calgary.)  
 Jameson, Clarence A., M. P., (Digby, N. S.)  
 Jeffers, Rev. E. T., D. D., (York, Pa.)  
 Jenks, Stuart, K. C.  
 Jennison, J. L., K. C., (Calgary, Alta.)  
 Jennison, H. V., (New Glasgow.)  
 Jennison, W. F., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Johnson, Jacob A., (Calgary, Alta.)  
 Johnston, Rev. Robt.  
 Jones, Herbert L., (Weymouth, N. S.)  
 Jones, Dr. J. Edgar, (Digby, N. S.)  
 Jones, Jas. C., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Jost, Dr. A. C., (Guysboro, N. S.)  
 Kaulbach, J. A., Very Rev., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Kellogg, W. B., (London, Eng.)  
 Kent, W. G.  
 King, Donald, A.  
 King, Rev. W. B., M. A., (Cambridge, Mass.)  
 Knight, J. A.  
 Knight, Rev. M. R., (Sackville, N. B.)  
 Lane, Charles W., (Lunenburg, N. S.)  
 Lawson, A. E., (Winnipeg, Man.)  
 Lawson, J. Murray, (Yarmouth, N. S.)  
 Leckie, Lt. Col. R. G. E., (Vancouver, B. C.)  
 Lockhart, Rev. Arthur John, (Winterport, Maine.)  
 Lockwood, Dr. T. C., (Lockeport, N. S.)  
 Logan, Daniel, (Honolulu.)  
 Logan, F. J., M. P. P., (Musquodoboit Harbor, N. S.)  
 Logan, J. D., Ph. D., (Toronto, Ont.)  
 Logan, J. W.  
 Longard, E. J.  
 Longley, Hon. Mr. Justice J. W.  
 Lumsden, Rev. James, (Gabarus.)  
 Margeson, J. W., M. P. P., (Bridgewater, N. S.)  
 Marshall, W. E., (Bridgewater, N. S.)  
 Martell, Archdeacon, D. C. L., (Windsor, N. S.)  
 Martin, Comr. E. H., R. N., (Dockyard)  
 Masters, C. H., (Ottawa.)  
 Mathers, Isaac H., R. St. O.  
 Maynell, W. B., (Louisbourg, C. B.)  
 Milner, F. L., (Amherst, N. S.)  
 Milner, W. C.  
 Mills, Col. D. A., (Beaulieu, Hants, Eng.)  
 Minard, Asa R., (Toronto, Ont.)  
 Mitchell, Archibald S.  
 Mitchell, C. H., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Morton, Rev. A. D., (Louisbourg, C. B.)  
 Morton, Rev. Arthur S.  
 Moore, Rev. E. B.  
 Morse, H. C., L. C. B., B. A., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Mullane, Geo.  
 Murray, Prof. D. A., (Montreal, Q.)  
 Murray, President Walter C., LL. D., (Saskatoon, Sask.)  
 Murray, Mrs. L. M., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Muir, Rev. W. Bruce, (Annapolis Royal, N. S.)  
 Mylius, L. J., (Winnipeg.)  
 McClure, Chas. H., (Cambridge, Mass.)  
 McCurdy, F. B., M. P.  
 McCallum, J. D.  
 Macdonald, C. Ochiltree  
 Macdonald, Daniel F., (Stellarton, N. S.)  
 McDonald, Hon. Judge James, (late Ch. Justice)  
 Macdonald, J. A., "The Globe," (Toronto, Ont.)  
 Macdonald, Jas. A., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Macdonald, Montague, (Quebec.)  
 Macdonald, Mrs. J. G., (Elizabeth R., Nelson, B. C.)  
 Macdonald, Hon. James, M. P. P., (West Bay, C. B.)  
 Macdonald, John D., (Pictou, N. S.)  
 Macdonald, Roderick  
 Macdonald, Dr. S. D.  
 McGregor, His Honor Lt. Gov. J. D.  
 McGregor, Hon. R. M., M. P. P., (New Glasgow, N. S.)  
 MacGregor, Jas., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 McGillivray, Hon. A., (Antigonish, N. S.)  
 Macgillivray, D.  
 McInnes, Hector, K. C.  
 McKay, Alexander  
 MacKay, A. A., K. C.  
 MacKay, A. H., LL. D.  
 MacKay, Prof. E., Ph. D.  
 MacKeen, Hon. Senator David  
 MacKenzie, President A. S., D. C. L.  
 MacKinlay, Andrew, (Halifax, N. S.)  
 MacKinnon, Prof. Rev. C., D. D., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 McLean, Jas. A., K. C., (Bridgewater, N. S.)  
 MacLean, Rev. John, D. D., (Winnipeg)  
 McLennan, Daniel, K. C., (Port Hood, C. B.)  
 MacLennan, Donald, M. P. P., (Port Hood, C. B.)  
 McLenan, Chas. A., (Truro, N. S.)  
 MacMechan, Archibald, Ph. D.  
 Macnab, Brenton A., (Montreal, Q.)  
 Macnab, John  
 Macnab, Wm.  
 MacPhie, Rev. J. P., (Lynn.)  
 McNeil, Alexander, Washington  
 McNeil, Archbishop, (Toronto, Ont.)  
 Nicholson, C. B., (Detroit.)  
 Nichols, E. Hart, (Calgary, Alta.)  
 Nichols, Geo. E. E.  
 Nicolls, Rev. W., (Mulgrave, N. S.)  
 Orde, J. F., (Ottawa, Ont.)  
 O'Dwyer, J. S., (Moncton, N. B.)  
 Outram, F. P.  
 Owen, D. M.  
 Owen, Mrs. J. M., (Annapolis Royal, N. S.)  
 Oxley, Col. F. H.  
 Paint, Henry N.  
 Parker, Rev. Lewis W., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Patterson, His Hon. Judge Geo., (New Glasgow, N. S.)  
 Payzant, J. Y., K. C.

- Payzant, W. L.  
 Perry, Mrs. N. Irwin, (St. Catherines, Ont.)  
 Piers, Harry  
 Pollok, Rev. Allan.  
 Power, J. J., K. C.  
 Power, J. U.  
 Power, Hon. Senator L. G., K. C.  
 Prescott, C. A.  
 Primrose, J., Mayor, (Pictou, N. S.)  
 Putman, Harold, (Truro, N. S.)  
 Pyke, John Geo., (Liverpool, N. S.)  
 Ragsdale, J. W., U. S. Consul General  
 Ralston, J. L., M. P. P.  
 Ralston, Mrs. J. L.  
 Rand, C. D., (Vancouver, B. C.)  
 Rand, Mrs. C. D., (Vancouver, B. C.)  
 Read, Dr. H. H.  
 Reid, Robie L., (Vancouver, B. C.)  
 Regan, John W.  
 Richardson, Ven. Archdeacon, D. C. L.,  
 (London, Ont.)  
 Ritchie, George  
 Ritchie, Miss Eliza, (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Ritchie, James D., (Head St. Margaret's  
 Bay)  
 Ritchie, Hon. Mr. Justice J. J.  
 Ritchie, Miss Mary  
 Ritchie, Reginald L., (Regina, Sask.)  
 Ritchie, W. B. A., K. C., (Vancouver, B. C.)  
 Roberts, Arthur, (Bridgewater, N. S.)  
 Robertson, T. Reginald, (Vancouver, B. C.)  
 Rogers, Mrs. H. W., (Amherst, N. S.)  
 Rogers, T. Sherman, K. C.  
 Ross, Senator, K. C.  
 Rowley, W. H., (Ottawa, Ont.)  
 Rowley, C. W., (Winnipeg, Man.)  
 Rowley, O. R., (Montreal, P. Q.)  
 Ruggles, J. R., (Lockport, N. S.)  
 Saunders, Edward M., (Calgary, Alta.)  
 Saunders, Miss M., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Savary, His Hon. Judge A. W., (Annapolis  
 Royal, N. S.)  
 Savary, T. W., Rev., (Kingston, Ont.)  
 Shatford, A. W., (Hubbards, N. S.)  
 Shatford, Rev. A. P., (Montreal, P. Q.)  
 Shaw, Leander, (Vancouver, B. C.)  
 Shortt, Alfred  
 Silver, A. E., K. C., Halifax, N. S.  
 Simson, Frank C.  
 Sinclair, John H., M. P., (New Glasgow,  
 N. S.)  
 Slade, F. M., (Montreal, Q.)  
 Smith, Rev. A. W. L., (River John, N. S.)  
 Smith, Edmund A.  
 Smith, Dr. L. W., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Smith, L. Mortimer  
 Smith, Dr. M. A. B., (Dartmouth, N. S.)  
 Soloan, David, LL. D., (Truro, N. S.)  
 Stairs, Geo. W., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Stairs, Geo. W.  
 Steele, Rev. D. A., D. D., (Amherst, N. S.)  
 Stewart, Rev. John H., (Pugwash, N. S.)  
 Stewart, Frank E., (Sydney, C. B.)  
 Stuart, Geo. W., Mayor, (Truro, N. S.)  
 St. Louis Mercantile Lib., Assoc., (St.  
 Louis, Mo.)  
 Sumichrast, Prof. F. J. de., (Boston,  
 Mass.)  
 Tanner, C. E., K. C., M. P. P., (Pictou, N. S.)  
 Theakston, Henry, (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Thorne, E. L.  
 Tory, President H. M., LL. D., (Edmon-  
 ton, Alta.)  
 Tory, Mrs. John A., (Toronto, Ont.)  
 Tory, Mr. J. A., (Toronto, Ont.)  
 Tremaine, R. A., (Truro.)  
 Tory, James C., M. P. P., (Guysboro, N. S.)  
 Townshend, Hon. Sir C. J., Ch. Justice  
 Trefry, J. H.  
 Tremaine, A. De B., (Ottawa, Ont.)  
 Traman, H. B., M. P., (Windsor, N. S.)  
 Tufts, Prof. J. F., D. C. L., (Wolfville,  
 N. S.)  
 Tupper, Hon. Sir C. H., K. C., (Van-  
 couver, B. C.)  
 Tupper, Rev. Joseph Freeman, (Domin-  
 ion, C. B.)  
 VanBuskirk, G. E., (Dartmouth, N. S.)  
 Vickery, Edgar J., (Yarmouth, N. S.)  
 Vidito, Lt.-Col. I. W., (Halifax, N. S.)  
 Wetherbe, Hon. Sir R. L., (Late Ch.  
 Justice.)  
 Whidden, C. Edgar, (Antigonish, N. S.)  
 White, Hon. N. W., K. C., (Shelburne, N. S.)  
 Whitman, A. Handfield  
 Whitman, E. C., (Canso, N. S.)  
 Wilson, Canon W. Chas., (Springhill, N. S.)  
 Willis, A. P., (Montreal, P. Q.)  
 Willis, Rev. J. J., (Westmount.)  
 Wilson, R. J.  
 Woodbury, Dr. F.  
 Woodworth, J. E., (Berwick, N. S.)  
 Worrell, Rt. Rev. C. L., D. D., Lord  
 Bishop of Nova Scotia.  
 Wylde, Col. J. T.  
 Yorston, Fred., (Montreal, P. Q.)  
 Zwicker, Edward J., (Cape North, C. B.)  
 Zwicker, Rupert G., (Cape North, C. B.)

A number of persons have been nominated and duly elected, but have not yet qualified by paying their entrance fees as required by Nos. 3 and 4 of the Rules and By-laws. August 20, 1912.

## Life Members.

Macdonald, Jas. S.  
 Ellis, Hon. J. H., (St. John, N. B.)

Curry, Hon. Nath., (Amherst, N. S.)

## Corresponding Members.

Goldsmid, Edmund, F. R. S., (Edinburgh.)

Ward, Robert, (Bermuda.)

Griffin, Martin J., C. M. G., (Ottawa.)

Wrong, Prof. Geo. M., M. A., (Toronto.)

Bryce, Rev. Geo., D.D., (Winnipeg.)

Adams, Chas. Francis, (Boston.)

Prowse, Judge D. W., (St. John's, Nfld.)

Ganong, Prof. W. F., (Northampton, Mass.)

Doughty, Arthur, G., LL. D., C. M. G., (Ottawa.)

## Honorary Members.

Sir Conan Doyle, (London.)

Chas. G. D. Roberts, (London.)

Ven. Archdeacon Raymond, (St. John,

N. B.)

**Members Elected by the Nova Scotia Historical Society, 1912-13.**

- Abbott, The Very Rev. H. P. Almon**, Hamilton, Ont.  
**Allen, William Thomas, Esq.**, 89 South Park St., Halifax.  
**Allison, E. P.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Almon, Rev. Herbert, L. A., B. D.**, Merriton, Ontario.  
**Andrew, Albert Edward, M. A., Rev.**, Rural Dean, Pictou.  
**Archibald, Luther B.**, Truro.  
**Armstrong, Frederick William**, Glace Bay.  
**Bennett, Annie Dunlop (Mrs.)**, Regina.  
**Bent, Barry Dickey**, Amherst.  
**Bent, F. P.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Bentley, Charles E.**, Truro.  
**Bill, John Philip Wiser, LL. B.**, Truro.  
**Bill, Captain Caleb Rand**, Collector of Customs, Wolfville N.S.  
**Black, William Anderson, Esq.**, Halifax.  
**Boutelier, Arthur**, Halifax.  
**Brookfield, S. M.**, Halifax.  
**Brookman, John**, Sydney, C. B.  
**Browne, Rev. John Davidson Hawthorne**, Church of St. Augustine-by-the-Sea, Santa Monica, California.  
**Bryden, Rev. Charles William, B. A.**, Wistawasis, Sask.  
**Buchanan, George Owen, Esq.**, Supervisor of Lead Bounties, 1060 Pendrell St., Vancouver, B. C.  
**Burpee, L. J.**, Ottawa.  
**Calkin, H. S.**, Londonderry, N. S.  
**Cantley, Thomas, Esq.**, Manager of Nova Scotia Steel Co., New Glasgow, N. S.  
**Chipman, L. de V.**, Annapolis.  
**Chisholm, J. A., K. C.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Chisholm, J. Scott**, Halifax.  
**Christie, Loring Cheney, LL. B.**, Editor-in-Chief, Harvard Law Review, Washington, D. C.  
**Clarke, M. S.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Cluney, A., K. C.**  
**Cohoe, Rev. Albert Bedell, M. A.**, Halifax.  
**Congdon, Frederick Tennyson, LL. B., K. C.**, Toronto.  
**Connolly, Prof. P. W.**, Truro, N. S.  
**Cooper, Rev. C.**, Caledonia, Queen's Co.  
**Cossey, S. R.**, Halifax.  
**Cowie, Andrew J., M. D.**, Halifax.  
**Cox, Robinson Esq., M. D.**, Upper Stewiacke.  
**Crowe, Geo. Reading**, Vice-President British Empire Grain Company, Winnipeg.  
**Crowell, Horatio, Esq.**, Halifax.  
**Crisp, Rev. J. O.**, Kingston, Ont.  
**Crofton, Arthur Molesworth**, Sidney.  
**Crowe, Harry Judson, Esq.**, Newfoundland Pine & Pulp Co. Toronto.  
**Cumming, Prof. M.**, Truro, N. S.  
**Curry, Senator Nathaniel**, Montreal and Ottawa, Life Member.

- Davison, Frank, Esq.,** Bridgewater.  
**Dickie, Alfred, Esq.,** Stewiacke.  
**Dickson, Wm. A.,** Pictou, N. S.  
**Dixon, Rev. R. F.,** Wolfville, N. S.  
**Donaldson, Rev. Lewis Johnston, M. A.,** Halifax.  
**Doull, Very Rev. Alexander John,** Dean of Columbia, Victoria  
 B. C.  
**Drysdale, The Hon. Mr.,** Halifax.  
**Dustan, The Rev. John Francis, M. A.,** Bridgetown, N. S.  
**Eagar, William Henry, Esq., M. D.,** Halifax.  
**Eaton, Adoniram Judson, Esq., Ph. D.,** Sec. Archaeological  
 Institute of America, Knowlton.  
**Ellis, Hon. John Valentine,** Senator, Editor St. John, N. B.  
 Globe, St. John, N. B., (Life Member).  
**Elliott, Charles Schomberg, Esq., M. D.,** Stellarton, N. S.  
**Faulkner, Professor John Alfred, D. D.,** Department of  
 Historical Theology, Drew Theological Seminary, Madison,  
 N. J.  
**Ferguson, William McMillan, LL. B.,** Truro.  
**Fergie, Charles, Esq.,** Mining Engineer, Montreal.  
**Ferris, T. Gordon,** South Park Street, Halifax.  
**Flint, Thomas Barnard, Esq., LL. D.,** Clerk of the House  
 of Commons, Ottawa.  
**Florence, Ephraim Watering, Rev.,** Westville.  
**Forbes, His Honor Judge,** Liverpool, N. S.  
**Forman, E. W.,** Glace Bay, C. B.  
**Foster, Mrs. W. G.,** Dartmouth, N. S.  
**Foster, William G.,** Dartmouth, N. S.  
**Frame, J.,** Regina, Sask.  
**Fraser, Rev. Alexander Louis, M. A.,** Great Village, N. S.  
**Fraser, Alfred Leslie,** New Glasgow.  
**Fraser, Duncan Mrs., Cameron,** New Glasgow.  
**Fraser, Chas. Frederick, LL. D.,** Principal School for the  
 Blind, Halifax.  
**Fraser, Rev. W. M.,** Halifax, N. S.  
**Fraser, R. P.,** Pictou, N. S.  
**Fulton, George Oxley,** Truro.  
**Gesner, Rev. R. H.,** Oswego, N. Y.  
**Gorham, J. W.,** Halifax.  
**Gillis, Rev. Dugald C., Ph. D., S. T. L.,** Professor of Greek  
 and Latin, St. Francis Xavier College, Antigonish.  
**Gilpin, Edward S.,** Sydney, C. B.  
**Gisborne, F. H.,** Ottawa.  
**Graham, Lord A.,** Devon, Eng.  
**Grant, Rev. Hugh Robert, B. A.,** New Glasgow.  
**Grant, J. Duncan,** Winnipeg.  
**Grant, Mrs. MacC.,** Halifax.  
**Grant, Prof. W. S.,** Kingston, Ont.  
**Gunnison, Herbert Foster,** Business Manager, The Brook-  
 lyn Eagle, Brooklyn, N. Y.  
**Hanright, .F W.,** Halifax.  
**Harris, The Rev. Rural Dean, Edward Alexander, M. A.,**  
 Mahone.  
**Harris, W. Critchlow, A. R. C. A.,** Halifax.  
**Harrison, Major Herbert Jesse,** Maccan, N. S.

- Hart, Miss Louisa Helena**, American Arcot Mission, Madanapalle, South India.  
**Hart, Havelock McColl, Esq.**, Halifax.  
**Hetherington, Joseph Linton**, Halifax.  
**Hemeon, Rev. Douglas, B., B. A.**, Hamilton, Bermuda.  
**Hendry, A. W.**, Liverpool.  
**Heustis, Miss Annie Campbell**, Halifax.  
**Hicks, Mrs. Robert Clarence** Rosetta, Sask.  
**Hill, Arthur Edmund Breton, B.A., B.Sc., C.E.**, Vancouver B. C.  
**Hill, Albert J.**, New Westminster.  
**Hill, Albert Ross, M. A., Ph. D.**, President, University of Missouri, Columbia, Mo.  
**Hill, Oliver Massie**, Halifax.  
**Hill, Miss Amy**, Halifax.  
**Horton, William T.**, Halifax.  
**Howard, John Esq.**, Agent General for Nova Scotia, London E.  
**Hunt, Lewis, Esq., M. D.**, London, England.  
**Irvine, J. A.**, Calgary, Alta.  
**Jeffers, Rev. Eliakim Tupper, D. D.**, President York Collegiate Institute, York, Pa.  
**Jennison, Hedley Vicars, LL. B.**, New Glasgow.  
**Jennison, William Franklin, M. E.**, Truro.  
**Jones, H. W.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Jones, James Clarence**, Halifax.  
**Jordan, Louis Henry, Rev., M. A., B. D.**, Downsleigh, Baslow Road, Eastbounre, England.  
**Kaulbach, The Ven. Jas. Albert, D. D.**, Archdeacon of Nova Scotia, Truro.  
**Kaulbach, Rupert C. S.**, Lunenburg.  
**King, R. M.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**King, The Rev. Wm. Benjamin Basil, M. A.**, Berkeley Street, Cambridge, Mass.  
**Laing, Pres. Robt.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Lawson, A. E.**, Winnipeg, Man.  
**Lawson, J. Murray**, Yarmouth, N. S.  
**Levatt, The Hon. H. V. C.**, Louisbourg.  
**Logan, Dr. J. D.**, Toronto, Ont.  
**Lumsden, James, Rev.**, Gabarus, C. B.  
**MacDonald, E. M., M.P.**, Pictou, N. S.  
**Macdonald, James Alexander, LL. D.**, Editor Toronto Globe, Toronto.  
**Macdonald, Mrs. J. G. Roberts**, Nelson, B. C.  
**Macdonald, Margaret C., Miss**, Military Hospital, Quebec.  
**Macdonald, J. A.**, Halifax.  
**Macdonald, William**, Halifax.  
**Macgregor, James**, Halifax.  
**MacKay, Wm.**, "Reserve Mine," Glace Bay.  
**MacKinlay, Andrew Esq.**, 139 Young Ave., Halifax.  
**MacNab, Miss Ella**, Halifax.  
**MacNab, Brenton A.**, Montreal.  
**MacKinnon, Principal C.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Macphie, Rev. John P., D. D.**, Lynn, Mass.  
**Macrae, Principal A. O., M. A., Ph. D.**, Western Canada College, Calgary.  
**Mader, A. Ivan, M. D.**, Halifax.

- MacLean, Hon. A. K.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**MacLean, J. G.**, Pictou, N. S.  
**Masters, Charles Harding, Esq., M. A.**, Reporter of the  
 Supreme Court of Canada, Ottawa.  
**McDonald, James A., LL. B.**, Halifax.  
**McDonald, Miss Lucy**, "Blink Bonnie," Quinpool Rd. Halifax  
**McKaracher, F.**, Pictou, N. S.  
**McKim, Geo. W.**, Westville, N. S.  
**McLeod, Hon. J. G.**, Judge Probate, Pictou.  
**McLennan, Sheriff Charles A.**, Truro.  
**McLennan, Samuel David, Judge of Probate**, Truro.  
**McLatchy, Harry Otis, LL. B.**, Truro.  
**McNeil, Archbishop Neil McNeil**, Archbishop's Residence,  
 Toronto.  
**McInnes, Mrs. Hector**, Halifax.  
**Milner, F. S.**, Amherst, N. S.  
**Mitchell, C. H.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Morrisey, Thomas L.**, Union Assurance Soc. Montreal.  
**Morse, H. C.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Morton, Mrs. Irene Elder**, Clementsport, N. S.  
**Mumford, F. O.**, Grand Lake.  
**Murray, Mrs. Leonard Milton**, Halifax.  
**Nickerson, Moses H., Esq.**, Clarke's Harbour, N. S.  
**Notting, Thomas, Esq.**, Mayor of Dartmouth.  
**Oakes, Ingraham, Esq.**, Barrister, Halifax.  
**O'Dwyer, J. Seabury**, Moncton, N. B.  
**O'Mullin, John C., LL. B.**, Halifax.  
**Orde, J. F.**, Ottawa.  
**Pollok, Rev. Allan**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Porter-Shirley, The Rev. C. W.**, Annapolis Royal.  
**Primrose, J.**, Mayor, Pictou.  
**Prince, Rev. S. H.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Putnam, Harold, LL. B.**, Registrar of Deeds. Truro.  
**Reid, James William, M. D., M. P. P.**, Windsor, N. S.  
**Richardson, L. N.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Ritchie, Dr. Eliza**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Ritchie, Reginald**, Regina, Sask.  
**Robertson, William**, Halifax.  
**Ross, Jas., M. D.**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Rowley, W. H.**, Ottawa.  
**Rowley, O. W.**, Montreal.  
**Rowley, H. H.**, Ottawa.  
**Rowley, C. W.**, Winnipeg, Man.  
**Ruggles, J. R.**, Collector Customs, Lockeport.  
**Rutherford, Colonel Robert William**, Halifax, N. S.  
**Russell, The Hon. Mr. Justice**, Supreme Court Halifax.  
**Saunders, Miss Marshall**, Halifax.  
**Savary, Rev. T. W.**, Kingston, Ont.  
**Shaw, L.**, Vancouver, B. C.  
**Silver, Louis M., M. D.**, Halifax.  
**Silver, Alfred E., K. C.**, Halifax.  
**Silver, Harold St. Clair, Esq.**, Halifax.  
**Smith, Nelson, B.**, Halifax.  
**Stuart, Geo. W.**, Mayor, Truro, N. S.  
**Sumichrast, Professor Frederick Caesar**, 1079 Boylston  
 Avenue, Boston, Mass.

- Switzer, F. M., Halifax, N. S.  
Terrell, James, Halifax.  
Theakston, Henry Esq., 56 Seymour St., Halifax.  
Tory, President H. M., LL. D., University of Alberta,  
Edmonton.  
Tory, John A., Sun Life, Toronto.  
Tory, Mrs. John A., Toronto.  
Tremaine, Rufus Arthur, Truro.  
Trenaman, Dr. T., Halifax, N. S.  
Underwood, J., Mayor, New Glasgow, N. S.  
Vawdrey, Lt.-Colonel George, Halifax, (C. P. A. S. C.)  
Vernon, Gilbert Hugh, LL. B., Truro.  
Vidito, Lt.-Col. I. W., Dartmouth, N. S.  
Walker, Rev. Frank, B. A., Ecum Secum, N. S.  
Walker, Smith Layton, B. A., M. D., Truro.  
Wallace, His Honour, Judge William Bernard, Halifax.  
Ward-Whate, Rev. F. C., M. A., Lunenburg.  
Willis, Mrs. Eliza Jane, Acadian School, Halifax.  
Willis, P. A., Montreal.  
Willis, Rev. J. J., Montreal.  
Wilson, The Rev. Canon, Springhill, N. S.  
Wood, Geo. M., Central Wharf, Halifax.  
Woodworth, John Elihu, Esq., Berwick, N. S.  
Yorston, Fred., Montreal.

# PRESIDENTS,

NOVA SCOTIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY,

1878-1913.

---

HON. MR. JUSTICE JOHN W. RITCHIE.....	1878-1879
REV. GEORGE W. HILL, D. D.....	1880-1881
THOMAS B. AKINS, D. C. L.....	1882-1883
REV. GEORGE W. HILL, D. D.....	1883-1885
LT.-GOV. SIR A. G. ARCHIBALD.....	1886-1892
LT.-GOV. M. H. RICHEY.....	1893-1895
HON. MR. JUSTICE WEATHERBE.....	1896-1897
HON. MR. JUSTICE LONGLEY.....	1897-1904
REV. JOHN FORREST, D. D.....	1905-1906
PROF. ARCHIBALD MACMECHAN, M. A., PH. D. . .	1907-1909
JAMES S. MACDONALD.....	1910-1911
VEN. ARCHDEACON W. J. ARMITAGE, M. A., PH. D. .	1911

**VICE-PRESIDENTS,**  
NOVA SCOTIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY.  
1878-1912.

REV. G. W. HILL, D. D. . . . . . 1878-1879  
 DAVID ALLISON, D. C. L. . . . . . 1880-1881  
 REV. GEO. W. HILL, D. D. . . . . . 1882  
 HON. SENATOR W. J. ALMON, M. D. . . . . . 1883-1889  
 THOMAS B. AKINS, D. C. L. . . . . . 1890

1891

THOS. B. AKINS, DAVID ALLISON, D.C.L., MR. JUSTICE WEATHERBE  
 1892

MR. JUSTICE WEATHERBE, HON. SENATOR POWER  
 HON. M. H. RICHEY.  
 1893-1895.

MR. JUSTICE LONGLEY. HON. SENATOR POWER.  
 REV. JOHN FORREST, D. D.  
 1896-1897.

HON. SENATOR POWER. REV. PRINCIPAL FORREST, D. D.  
 DR. A. H. MACKAY.  
 1898-1901.

HON. SENATOR POWER. MR. JUSTICE TOWNSHEND.  
 DR. A. H. MACKAY.  
 1902-1904.

W. H. HILL. MR. JUSTICE TOWNSHEND. HON. SENATOR POWER.  
 1905-1906.

MR. JUSTICE LONGLEY. SENATOR POWER,  
 MR. JUSTICE TOWNSHEND.  
 1907-1909.

MR. JUSTICE LONGLEY. SENATOR POWER.  
 VEN. ARCHDEACON ARMITAGE.  
 1910.

MR. JUSTICE LONGLEY. VEN. ARCHDEACON ARMITAGE.  
 DR. M. A. B. SMITH.  
 1911.

MR. JUSTICE LONGLEY. LT.-COL. F. H. OXLEY.  
 A. H. BUCKLEY, PH. M.  
 1912.

DAVID ALLISON, D. C. L., JOHN Y. PAYZANT, M. A.,  
 A. H. BUCKLEY, PH. M.  
 1913.

DAVID ALLISON, D. C. L. MAJOR J. PLUMSOLL EDWARDS.  
 J. A. CHISHOLM, K. C.

# COUNCIL 1878-1913.

<p style="text-align: center;">1878.</p> <p>DR. W. J. ALMON JAS. S. MACDONALD. REV. T. J. DALY. GEO. E. MORTON.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1890.</p> <p>HON. SENATOR ALMON PETER LYNCH, DR. A. H. MACKAY. REV. T. W. SMITH.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1902.</p> <p>REV. DR. T. W. SMITH. J. J. STEWART. PROF. A. MACMECHAN. REV. DR. SAUNDERS.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1879.</p> <p>DR. W. J. ALMON. REV. T. J. DALY. GEO. E. MORTON. W. D. HARRINGTON.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1891.</p> <p>HON. DR. ALMON. DR. A. H. MACKAY. J. J. STEWART. . REV. T. W. SMITH.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1903.</p> <p>ARCHIBALD FRAME. PROF. A. MACMECHAN. J. J. STEWART. REV. DR. SAUNDERS.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1880.</p> <p>DR. W. J. ALMON. J. J. STEWART. G. E. MORTON. WM. COMPTON.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1892.</p> <p>HON. DR. ALMON. J. J. STEWART. DR. POLLOK. REV. T. W. SMITH.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1904.</p> <p>REV. DR. SAUNDERS. PROF. A. MACMECHAN. ARCH. FRAME. J. J. STEWART.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1881.</p> <p>DR. W. J. ALMON. G. E. MORTON. J. J. STEWART. JOSEPH AUSTEN.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1893.</p> <p>HON. DR. ALMON. J. J. STEWART. DR. A. H. MACKAY. REV. T. W. SMITH.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1905.</p> <p>REV. DR. SAUNDERS. DR. A. MACMECHAN. J. J. STEWART. ARCHIBALD FRAME.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1882.</p> <p>HON. SENATOR ALMON. DR. J. R. DEWOLF. JAMES S. MACDONALD. PETER ROSS.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1894.</p> <p>HON. JUDGE TOWNSHEND. J. J. STEWART. DR. A. H. MACKAY. REV. T. W. SMITH.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1906.</p> <p>DR. A. MACMECHAN. J. J. STEWART. ARCHIBALD FRAME. HARRY PIBBS.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1883.</p> <p>HON. SENATOR POWER. PETER LYNCH. R. J. WILSON. PETER ROSS.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1895.</p> <p>HON. C. J. TOWNSHEND. J. J. STEWART. DR. A. H. MACKAY. REV. T. W. SMITH.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1907.</p> <p>J. J. STEWART. J. P. EDWARDS. A. H. BUCKLEY. ARCHIBALD FRAME.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1884.</p> <p>HON. SENATOR POWER. W. D. HARRINGTON. DR. D. ALLISON. F. B. CROFTON.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1896.</p> <p>J. J. STEWART. MR. JUSTICE TOWNSHEND. REV. T. W. SMITH. PROF. A. MCMECHAN.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1908.</p> <p>JAMES S. MACDONALD. A. H. BUCKLEY. ARCHIBALD FRAME. G. W. T. IRVING.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1885.</p> <p>R. J. WILSON. DR. D. ALLISON. F. B. CROFTON. W. D. HARRINGTON.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1897.</p> <p>J. J. STEWART. MR. JUSTICE TOWNSHEND. PROF. A. MCMECHAN. REV. T. W. SMITH.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1909.</p> <p>ARCHIBALD FRAME. A. H. BUCKLEY. G. W. T. IRVING. J. H. TREFRY.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1886.</p> <p>SIR ADAMS ARCHIBALD. T. B. AKINS. DR. DAVID ALLISON. REV. DR. FORREST.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1898.</p> <p>REV. DR. FORREST. REV. T. W. SMITH. PROF. A. MACMECHAN. REV. DR. SAUNDERS.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1910.</p> <p>G. E. E. NICHOLS. A. H. BUCKLEY. DR. A. MACMECHAN. G. W. T. IRVING.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1887.</p> <p>JUDGE WEATHERBE. DR. D. ALLISON. PETER LYNCH. REV. DR. POLLOK.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1899.</p> <p>REV. DR. FORREST. REV. T. W. SMITH. REV. DR. SAUNDERS. PROF. A. MACMECHAN.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1911.</p> <p>G. E. E. NICHOLLS. J. H. TREFRY. JAS. S. MACDONALD. DR. JOHN FORREST.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1888.</p> <p>PETER LYNCH. THOS. BAYNE. DR. POLLOK. PETER ROSS.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1900.</p> <p>REV. DR. FORREST. REV. T. W. SMITH. REV. DR. SAUNDERS. PROF. A. MACMECHAN.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1912.</p> <p>G. E. E. NICHOLLS. G. W. T. IRVING. DR. M. A. B. SMITH. W. C. MILNER.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">1889.</p> <p>HON. DR. ALMON. THOS. BAYNE. REV. T. W. SMITH. PETER LYNCH.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1901.</p> <p>J. J. STEWART. REV. DR. SAUNDERS. REV. T. W. SMITH. PROF. A. MACMECHAN.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1913.</p> <p>A. H. BUCKLEY. G. W. T. IRVING. W. C. MILNER. HON. MR. JUSTICE RUSSELL.</p>







The Unveiling of the Tablet marking the birth-place of Joseph Howe. Sydenham Howe, son of Joseph Howe, speaking. On the platform from left to right, Mayor Chisholm, Sir Sanford Fleming, Hon. Wm. Ross, Lt.-Governor Macgregor, Archdeacon Armitage, Judge Russell, Dr. Saunders, Hon. B. F. Pearson.

(The site of Joseph Howe's birth-place, long in question, was decided by Mr. Geo. Mullan's search in the Registry of Deeds.)

## THE PRESIDENT'S REPORT.

---

At the Annual Meeting of the Nova Scotia Historical Society, which was held in the Council Chamber of the Province Building on Friday evening, 11th April, 1913, the Ven. Archdeacon Armitage, the President, reported that the year had been marked by continual progress. We have added 152 to the roll of membership, and of this number your President has had the privilege of nominating 128.

The year has been especially fruitful in regard to the placing of Historic Tablets. We have marked historic sites in six counties of the Province. We were greatly favoured by the presence and active interest of His Royal Highness, the Duke of Connaught, and the Royal party.

The following Tablets were placed during the Royal Tour: Three at Pictou: (a) marking the Services of Sir John William Dawson our greatest Geologist, on Pictou Academy; (b) marking the Birth-place of Dawson; (c) marking the Foundation of Pictou Academy, and commemorating the services of Dr. Thomas MacCulloch; one at Truro, commemorating the Founding of Truro, under Colonel Alexander McNutt; one at Halifax marking the Quarters of Sir John Moore, "the hero of Corunna;" three at Windsor, (a) marking the Foundation of King's College, the oldest University in Canada; (b) marking the Home of Thomas Chandler Haliburton, the Creator of "Sam Slick"; (c) marking the sole remaining Block-house in Nova Scotia, at the ancient Fort Edward; two at Annapolis Royal; (a) marking the Birthplace of Sir Fenwick Williams; (b) marking the birth-place of Sir William Robert Wolseley Winniett.

The Society has also placed Tablets marking, (1) the Office of James William Johnston; (2) the Historic Council Table;

(3) the Old Halifax Grammar School, and former meeting place of the House of Assembly.

The programme for the year was of varied interest.

The following papers were read:

November: "Old Dartmouth:" The Hon. Mr. Justice Russell.

December: "A Sketch of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, a Representative of Halifax in the Early Forties;" by Mr. George Mullane.

"Short Historical Note on the so-called 'Norse Stone,' at Yarmouth," by Mr. Moses H. Nickerson.

January: "Brief Historical Note on Thomas Williams, grandfather of Sir Fenwick Williams, by Captain Jas. D. Ritchie.

"An old Edition of Galen, by Laguna, 1604, in the Cogswell Library," by Professor D. Fraser Harris, M. D., D. Sc., F. R. S. E.

"The Historical Method" by Professor Jas. W. Falconer, D. D.

February: "Why the First Settlers came to Nova Scotia," by Rev. John Forrest, D. D., D. C. L., LL.D.

March: "The Ancient French Cemetery near Rockingham," by Mr. H. N. Paint.

"The Finding of Alexander McNutt," by the Rev. Arthur Wentworth Eaton, M. A., D. C. L.

April: "Reminiscences of the House of Assembly," by the Hon. Mr. Justice Russell.

May: "Reminiscences of a Long Life," by John Mackay, Esq., New Glasgow, 1772-1884—92 years,—by Rev. Allan Pollok, D. D.





Group at "Emscote," the Site of Eirth-place of Hon. Joseph Howe. The group includes a number of descendants and near relatives of Joseph Howe, and representative citizens. (Left to right,) Mayor Chisholm, Alvin F. MacDonald (Chronicle), Rev. Dr. Saunders, Harry Piers, Archdeacon Armitage, Sydenham Howe, Lt. Gov. Macgregor, Hon. B. F. Pearson, Captain Hicks, Judge Russell, Hon. Geo. E. Faulkner, Hon. Wm. Ross, Sir Sanford Fleming, Dr. A. H. MacKay, W. R. McCurdy (Herald), Col. J. T. Wylde, H. W. Blackadar.

It has been a great encouragement in connection with the work of the Society to find that Nova Scotians the world over are interested. We have now members on four continents, and I look forward to the time when every part of the Empire will be represented. Nova Scotians have certainly done their share in the upbuilding of the Empire. The number of distinguished men who have recently joined the Society is very remarkable, and is fruitful in testimony of the place Nova Scotians hold in the world's life.

### THE BIRTH PLACE OF JOSEPH HOWE.

A tablet to mark the birthplace of Nova Scotia's great son, Joseph Howe, was erected on the gatepost of "Emscote," on the North West Arm, the residence of Hon. B. F. Pearson, 24th July, 1911, and was unveiled by Lieut-Governor MacGregor in the presence of a large company of admirers of the great statesman, orator and publicist.

The Tablet reads:—

**The birthplace of  
JOSEPH HOWE,  
A. D., 1804,  
Patriot, Statesman, Imperialist, Orator,  
gratefully remembered as Nova  
Scotia's leader in  
obtaining responsible  
Government.**

**Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

Addresses were delivered by Archdeacon Armitage, Lieut-Governor MacGregor, His Worship Mayor Chisholm, the Hon. Mr. Justice Russell, Mr. Sydenham Howe, the Hon. Senator Ross and Hon. B. F. Pearson.

---

### THE FIRST PRINTING PRESS.

The Society unveiled, October 10th, 1911, at 173 Grafton street, a tablet commemorating the establishment of the first printing press in Canada and the place of the publication of the first newspaper in the Dominion.

Venerable Archdeacon Armitage presided, His Worship Mayor Chisholm unveiled the tablet, which bears the following inscription:—

**The Site of  
The first printing press in Canada  
Established by Bartholomew Green, Jr., 1751;  
And of John Bushell's press,  
Where the Halifax Gazette,  
The first newspaper in Canada  
was published, 1752.**

**Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

Addresses were delivered by Mr. J. S. MacDonald, Mr. D. R. Jack, of St. John, N. B., and by Mr. J. W. Regan.

It is my duty to make clear the selection of this site, said Dr. Armitage. The first legal testimony is in the Registry of Deeds, when on the 2nd December, 1754, William Foye, provost marshal, made a deed to Richard Upham, of Reading, New England, in consideration of £7. 4s. 4d. "to satisfy an execution of said Upham against John Bushell," which conveys lot No. 3 in Letter F., Collins' division. On the 6th June, 1759, Joseph Ford conveys to Bushell in consideration of £25. lot No. 4. On 9th December, 1760, for £61 Upham conveys lot No. 3 to Bushell. Bushell died in 1761, and in 1764, Elizabeth Bushell conveys lot No. 4 to Anthony Henry; and on 3rd September, 1763, Anthony Henry purchased from Malachy Salter lot No. 1, corner of Grafton and Sackville Streets. The property first specified afterwards came into the hands of the Blackadar family, long and honorably associated with the press of Halifax. It is a spot of great historic interest, worthy of an enduring tablet.

---

### THE HEADQUARTERS OF GENERAL WOLFE.

A Tablet marking General Wolfe's Headquarters was placed 24th July, 1911, on Robert Stanford's premises, 156-158 Hollis St. Addresses were given by the President, by Brigadier-General Drury, Lt-Colonel Denison, Lt.Colonel Oxley and Com-

mander Martin. The Tablet was unveiled by General Drury, C. B., A. D. C., O. C., Maritime Provinces. The inscription reads:

**The Site of Head-Quarters and Residence of  
GENERAL WOLFE  
While Preparing for the Capture of Louisbourg and Quebec.  
1758-1759.**

**Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

---

## THE SITE OF FIRST COURT HOUSE.

On the 15th November, 1911, Sir Charles Townshend, Chief Justice of Nova Scotia, unveiled the Tablet marking the site of the First Court House. The President, the Chief Justice, The Hon. Mr. Justice Graham, and The Hon. Mr. Justice Russell were the speakers.

The Tablet is on the Farmer's Hotel, Cor. Buckingham and Argyle Streets. The inscription reads:—

**The Site of the First Court House,  
About 1754.  
The Meeting Place of the First  
Legislative Assembly, 1758,  
Destroyed by Fire 1789.**

**Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

---

## ST. PAUL'S CHURCH.

On one of the pillars of the fence surrounding historic St. Paul's a Tablet has been placed with the following inscription:—

**St. Paul's Church  
Royal Foundation, King George II, 1749.  
The Oldest Building in Halifax**

**Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

**RESIDENCE OF HON. RICHARD BULKELEY.**

On the Carleton House a Tablet has been placed marking:—

**The Residence of  
Hon. Richard Bulkeley, First Secretary of the Province, Where for  
a time the Vice Admiralty Court was held.  
Erected 1760.**

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

**THE GREAT PONTAC.**

On James Duggan & Sons building, Cor. Upper Water and Duke Streets a Tablet has been placed marking:—

**The Site of  
The Great Pontac  
Famous as the Social Meeting Place of early days,  
1753.**

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

**ST. PETER'S CHURCH.**

On St. Mary's Parish Hall, a Tablet has been placed marking:—

**The Site of  
St Peter's Roman Catholic Church,  
1784  
Which preceded St. Mary's Cathedral.  
Erected 1820.**

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

**OLD ST. MATTHEW'S CHURCH.**

On J. C. Mackintosh & Co's Building, Cor. Hollis and Prince Streets, a Tablet has been placed:—

**The Site of  
St. Matthew's Church  
Formerly known as "Mather's Church;" "The First"  
Protestant Dissenting Meeting House;"  
built by the British Government,  
Destroyed by Fire in 1857.**

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

**HON. JAMES WILLIAM JOHNSTON.**

A tablet marking the historic building on Hollis Street, the place where Hon. J. W. Johnston had his office (the building now occupied by the Nova Scotia Building Society) was placed on the 3rd July, 1912. The ceremony of unveiling was performed by Lieut-Governor MacGregor. Those who took part were Venerable Archdeacon Armitage, Dr. E. M. Saunders and John Y. Payzant. The tablet bears the following inscription:—

**The Office of James William Johnston,  
1792-1873.**

**First Premier of Nova Scotia under Responsible Government.  
Orator, Jurist, Statesman.**

**Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

---

**THE HISTORIC COUNCIL TABLE.**

The Hon. M. H. Goudge unveiled the Tablet marking the historic Council Table in the Legislative Council Chamber.

**Around this Table Sat,  
His Majesty's Council  
For the Province of Nova Scotia,  
14th July, 1749.**

**On Board the Beaufort Transport; Present, His Excellency the Governor, The Honorable Edward Cornwallis, Paul Mascarene, Esq., Edward How, Esq., John Gorham, Esq., Benjamin Green, Esq., John Salisbury, Esq., Hugh Davidson, Esq., Sec'y.**

**Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

---

**THE OLD HALIFAX GRAMMAR SCHOOL.**

The Tablet marking the site of the old Halifax Grammar School, Cor. Barrington and Sackville Streets, was unveiled by the Hon. G. H. Murray, Premier of Nova Scotia. Speeches were delivered by the President, by the Premier, by Dr. A. H. MacKay, Superintendent of Education, and by R. J. Wilson, M. A., Secretary Board of School Commissioners.

**The Site of  
The building where the General (legislative)  
Assembly of Nova Scotia met, about  
1765-1789.**

**The Halifax Grammar School, 1789.  
Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

## THE OLD PICTOU ACADEMY.

H. R. H. the Duke of Connaught unveiled the tablets on the 31st July, 1912, on this historic building. The President, Ven. Archdeacon Armitage, delivered the address.

### SIR JOHN WILLIAM DAWSON.

"This tablet commemorates Sir John William Dawson, F. R. S., 1820-1899, Geologist, Educated at Pictou Academy, Superintendent of Education of Nova Scotia, 1850, Principal of McGill University, 1855, first President of the Royal Society of Canada, 1882, President of the British Association, 1886."

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

### THE REV. THOMAS MacCULLOCH, D. D.

"This tablet commemorates the services to the cause of Education of the Rev. Thomas MacCulloch, D. D., 1766-1843, first Principal of Pictou Academy, 1817-24. President of Dalhousie College and University, 1838; and marks Pictou Academy, founded 1816, which has profoundly influenced the intellectual life of this Province and the Dominion."

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

### BIRTH-PLACE OF SIR WILLIAM DAWSON.

A Tablet has been placed on the house in Pictou in which Sir Wm. Dawson was born, which reads as follows:—

The birth-place of  
Sir John William Dawson, F. R. S.,  
Geologist,  
1820.

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

### THE BRITISH SETTLEMENT OF TRURO, ONSLOW AND LONDONDERRY.

On the 1st August, 1912, H. R. H. the Duke of Connaught, unveiled a Tablet at Truro which was placed on the Court





**The Unveiling of the Tablets to Sir. Wm. Dawson and President Thomas MacCulloch on the Old Pictou Academy by H. R. H. The Duke of Connaught.**

House. The President, Ven. Archdeacon Armitage, was present and gave the address. The tablet bears the following inscription:—

**“This tablet commemorates the British settlement of Truro, Onslow and Londonderry, 1760-1762, partly by a colony of English stock from New England, chiefly by Scoto-Irish from New Hampshire and Ireland under the leadership of Colonel Alexander McNutt; and Honors a Community which has made a notable contribution to the development of this Province and the Dominion.**

**Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

---

### **QUARTERS OF SIR JOHN MOORE.**

The unveiling of the tablet on the front of the Bank of Nova Scotia building, Hollis St., by His Royal Highness the Duke of Connaught took place 15th August, 1912. The bank building stands on the site of the traditional headquarters of Sir John Moore while serving on this station. The tablet is of cast bronze, the work of Messrs. J. Wippell & Co., of Exeter and London. It is a very artistic piece of work, classical in design, with Gothic letters. The pillars contain the names of the chief places in which Sir John Moore served, Corsica, West Indies, Egypt, Sicily, Sweden, America, Corunna. Over the Inscription is a beautiful medallion of the great soldier finely executed, and beneath are draped flags with laurel branches.

The inscription runs:—

**“This tablet marks the Site of the Quarters  
While serving in this Garrison,  
1779-81,  
Of Captain Lt., afterwards Major General,  
Sir John Moore,  
Who after heroic service in the Peninsular War,  
won undying fame at Corunna,  
1809.”**

**The Nova Scotia Historical Society.**

**KING'S COLLEGE, WINDSOR.**

The historic tablet was unveiled by H. R. H. the Duke of Connaught on the 16th August, 1912, after a brief explanatory address by Rev. Dr. Armitage.

The inscription reads:—

**This tablet commemorates the foundation of King's College in 1790 by Bishop Charles Inglis, (William Cochran T. C. D., President) Which was constituted the First University in Canada, By Royal Charter from King George III, in 1802, and has been the Alma Mater of a long line of distinguished sons who have served the Empire with signal ability.**

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

**THOMAS CHANDLER HALIBURTON.**

H. R. H. the Duke of Connaught unveiled the Tablet marking the residence of Judge Haliburton at Windsor, N. S., on the 16th August, 1912. The inscription reads as follows:—

**"Clifton,"  
the home of  
Thomas Chandler Haliburton,  
Born 1796, Died 1865.  
The Father of American Humour  
and Creator of "Sam Slick,"  
Historian, Jurist, Legislator.**

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

**THE BLOCKHOUSE, WINDSOR, N. S.**

The Tablet on the old Blockhouse reads as follows:—

**This, the last surviving Blockhouse in Nova Scotia was erected by Major Charles Lawrence, 1750, in a fortification afterwards known as Fort Edward.**

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

## SIR FENWICK WILLIAMS.

On the 17th of August, 1912, the Duke of Connaught unveiled a Tablet to commemorate the birth-place of Sir Fenwick Williams on the Royal Bank of Canada at Annapolis Royal. His Honour Judge Savary gave the address. The monument is in cast bronze, with a beautiful medallion. The inscription reads:—

**This tablet marks the birthplace of General Sir William Fenwick Williams, Baronet, 1799-1888, The Hero of Kars, Pasha of Turkey, Grand Officer of the Legion of Honour, France, Member of the British Parliament, Governor-in-Chief Forces British North America, Governor of Gibraltar, Constable of the Tower, Lieut.-Governor of His Native Province.**

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

## SIR WILLIAM WINNIETT.

The Duke of Connaught unveiled the Aluminium Tablet marking the birth-place of Sir William Winniett at Annapolis Royal. The historical address was given by His Honour Judge Savary. The inscription reads:—

**On the next Lot south now merged in the Street,  
was born, March 2, 1793,  
Sir William Robert Wolseley Winniett,  
Knight, Captain R. N.,  
Governor-General, Cape Coast District,  
Beneficent Administrator, Valiant Officer.**

Nova Scotia Historical Society.

---

The Ven. Archdeacon Armitage, President of the Society, made the following announcements.

Mr. William C. Milner, B. Sc., a member of our Council, has been appointed to the Staff of the Dominion Archives, Ottawa; and is specially commissioned to study the conditions, and to care for historical material in the Maritime Provinces.

The President of the Society has been appointed a member of the Historical Manuscripts Commission in connection with the Dominion Archives.

The Historical Manuscripts Commission of Ottawa has decided to place a Photostat in Halifax, for the purpose of photographing documents, maps, and books; and will allow the instrument to be used for our Provincial Archives.

The Halifax Branch of the Imperial Order of the Daughters of the Empire, through Mrs. Leonard Milton Murray, has provided the sum of \$100.00 for the purpose of marking historic sites in co-operation with our Society.

The death of Mr. Robert James Wilson, M. A., the esteemed Treasurer of the Society for some twenty-six years, and for over thirty years one of our most useful members, will long be felt. Mr. Wilson was a public spirited citizen, and keen student of our local history. He was full of reminiscences of our public men, and of events of historic interest.

The official appointment of Hon. Brenton Halliburton, Dr. Willis, Rev. John Scott, Hon. H. H. Cogswell and W. B. Bliss as Trustees of the old Grammar School, has been placed in our Archives through the kindness of Mr. J. C. Mackintosh.

Mr. C. Ochiltree MacDonald has presented the Society with a handsome engraving by Wood, engraver to the King, of "The Death of Wolfe," taken from the painting by Benjamin West. This engraving had hung in the same place, near Wolfe's birth-place for over one hundred years.

Mrs. Charles Archibald has presented to the Archives, the official petition of the Magistrates of Halifax to the Lt. Governor requesting that the party who made serious charges against them in the "*Nova Scotian*" of 1st January, signed "The People" be immediately prosecuted.

This led to the celebrated prosecution of Howe for libel.

The Rev. Alfred Hall of the British and Foreign Sailors' Society has presented the Society with a copper Salver, made from the copper of Nelson's Flag-ship the "Victory."

### **Papers of Bishop Charles Inglis.**

The President, Ven. Archdeacon Armitage, announced that through the kindness of Rev. Rupert Inglis, the papers of Bishop Charles Inglis were now in Halifax and would be copied for the Dominion and Provincial Archives. These include:

1. Letter Book from 1791 to 1799.
2. Journal of 'Occurrences' 1785-6.
3. Letter Book 1808-14.
4. Brief "Notes or Memoirs of Public and Various other transactions: Taken to assist my memory, begun Jan. 1775." (The last date is 1791.) Large book, No. of page not given.
5. Leaves taken from a Common Place Book of my Grandfather's 1789. Catalogue of his Books 1770. (Jane Inglis.)
6. Leaves cut from public Acts, kept by my Grandfather (Charles Inglis) and my dear father begun in the year 1787 ended 1826. (Jane Inglis 1852.)
7. Large Book containing Memorials (1786): Claims 178. Deed St. Paul's Halifax, 1760 and Letters and Memoranda from 1789 to 1810.
8. Catalogue of Books 1768: Address to Students, etc., (say 50 p.).
9. 10 Diaries and Journals of say 50 pages, as follows (1) England 1787, Nova Scotia (No. 2) 1790; (2) Nova Scotia 1790; (3) Nova Scotia 1791; (4) Nova Scotia and New Brunswick No. 2. 1792; (5) No. 1 Nova Scotia and New Brunswick 1792; (6) Nova Scotia 1793; (7) N. Scotia 1794 and beginning of 1795 also 1797; (8) Nova Scotia and New Brunswick; 1795; (9) Nova Scotia, 1798 (10) Cape Breton 1805 (11) New Brunswick 1804 (4 p) (2) New Brunswick and Nova Scotia 1788: (13) Quebec 1789 (No. 1) (14) Quebec 1789 No. 2.)

10. Almanacs with Notes Nova Scotia Calendar 1798 pub. Henry: Almanac 1807 ditto pub. Howe: ditto for 1809: ditto 1810.

**Bishop John Inglis' Papers.**

1. Five Journals or Diaries say 50 pages each 1806-7.
2. Letter Book etc., from 1825 to 1849 (325 pages).

---

The President presented a communication addressed to His Honour Judge Savary, from W. G. Clarke of Bear River.

**The Mysterious Craft at the Mouth of Bear River.**

A matter has come to my attention during the last few days in which I think you will be interested, and knowing you were a member of the Nova Scotia Historical Society, I thought it advisable to communicate to you the facts as they were placed before me.

Mr. Edward Powers of the contracting firm of Powers and Brewer, who are building the new railway bridge at the mouth of the Bear River, while boring to ascertain the depth of the mud at the point where the heaviest piers are to be located came upon an obstruction. This obstruction upon investigation appears to be a sunken vessel. At the point where this occurred there is twenty feet of water at low water and the obstruction or vessel referred to is covered with twenty-five feet of silt or mud, showing that many years have passed since the vessel first settled at that point.

Further investigation shows the vessel to be about one hundred and twenty (120) feet long, and twenty-two feet wide. In using the diamond drill to discover the nature of the obstruction they have bored through two or three thicknesses which would indicate that the frame of the vessel is still intact and from the core brought up on the auger the planking appears to be of oak. The ballast which was struck by the

auger after boring through four inches of plank was found to be of a material very like flint but entirely different from any material found in this locality.

It occurs to the writer that this may be an old French vessel sunk at this point in the early history of the locality. Do you know anything of the sinking of a craft in the early history of this country? I have submitted these facts in the hope of getting some information and felt that you would be interested.

To the Editor of the (Digby) Courier.

Dear Sir:— May I give you some simple facts about the sunken vessel Messrs. Powers & Brewer's drill struck at the mouth of Bear River as reported in a recent issue of the Courier. My father, if alive, would be 105 years old. When eight years old he lived with his uncle in Digby. I heard him frequently tell about a vessel (a brig, I think) which was driven into Digby by a storm in winter, ran up in what is now called the Joggin, and remained there the remainder of the winter frozen in the ice. At the time of her arrival the crew were badly frozen; one man had to be brought on shore to be cared for. Men from the shore went on board and helped them clew up their sails. The crew, which I think were all French, remained on board. My father said the vessel had a part of a cargo of copper ore and in the early spring started to resume her voyage, but never got outside of Digby Gut. The wind sprang up from the North and the people from Digby saw her running for what is now known as Bear River, in a sinking condition. She missed the Cove and sank and like other stories, I have been told, she soon disappeared in the mud. I further talked with the late Mr. Abraham Nichols, not over 11 years ago, about this strange craft and he said that the older people told him that the cargo was supposed to be copper ore.

Strange stories came from people that the captain and crew buried money on the lands of Mr. Nichols and people

have dug nearly the whole pasture without success. I also heard my grandfather talk about this vessel being in Digby as above described. He was a captain and his father also knew about it. They lived about one quarter of a mile from the Joggin. All of the old people of Digby are dead, but what I heard I remember. Ask Benj. VanTassell, Mt. Pleasant, what he thinks about the buried money where the brig laid in the Joggin. I have looked for Capt. Kidd's treasure which is a blank as yet. But I have a sunken craft to go down on this summer which I trust will not be a failure.

Yours respectfully,

E. H. Timpany,  
Sandy Cove.

P. S.—If lies come to hand, I have told you none in the above letter—not for the whole ship.

The above is from Digby Courier of April 18, 1913. E. H. Timpany is well known to me. His father was Robert K. Timpany, Esq., of Rossway, Justice of the Peace, whom also I well knew. The latter was a son of John A. Timpany, of Rossway, and grandson of Major Robert Timpany, the distinguished Loyalist officer. (See Sabine's Loyalist). There seems no reason to doubt the accuracy of the tradition communicated by E. H. Timpany. I believe it to be reliable. Abraham Nichols was a good intelligent man.

Annapolis Royal, May 1st, 1913.

A. W. Savary.

The President presented a copy of the Memorial of the Nova Scotia Association of Veterans of 1866, to the Parliament of Canada, and now placed in the Archives of the Society by Lt. Colonel John T. Wyld. The Memorial contains copies of all the original documents, and the Names of the Memorialists.

The President presented an original document, prepared by Colonel Fenwick of St. Leonards-on-the-Sea, and forwarded to Judge Savary:—"Memoranda relative to the connection of the Fenwick family with Nova Scotia." Most of the matter contained therein has been furnished from the Royal Artillery Records, domestic matters, from documents in the family.

The President presented, through the kindness of Rev. Dr. Pollok, a type-written copy: "Reminiscences of a Long Life" by John MacKay, Esq., New Glasgow, 1792-1884-92 years.

Note on Dr. Matthew Matthias Hoffman, communicated by the President:—

The President handed to the Society for the Archives a coloured photograph, kindly donated by Mrs. Annie Creed, of a painting of her late father, Matthew Matthias Hoffman, Esq., M. D. The original painting, now in the possession of the family, is by Hoppner, and was painted about 1809. Hoppner, it will be remembered, was one of the greatest portrait painters of his day, and was Lawrence's greatest rival, numbering amongst his sitters, the Duke of York, Lord Rodney, Lord Nelson, the Duke of Wellington, and Sir Walter Scott.

Dr. Hoffman was a member of an ancient Austrian family, and was born at Trieste in 1780. He was educated at the University of Vienna. He passed his naval examination at Haslar Hospital, and entered the British navy at the critical time which marked the victorious return of Lord Nelson after the battle of the Nile. Dr. Hoffman was with Collingwood in the Mediterranean, and rendered a great service to the fleet at the risk of his life. On his return to his ship the "Ocean," Collingwood met him on the quarter-deck and with a hearty shake of his hand said "Hoffman, for your bravery and pluck I promote you to one of the finest frigates in the service, the "Endymion." Soon after this Hoffman saw service in the Peninsular War. He was chosen for service on the field at Corunna, as the Army was short of surgeons. He was quite near Sir John Moore at the time that great hero fell, and was

present at his funeral. It is remarkable that Henry Morrisey, an ancestor of the Rhind family, who it is said held the lantern at the interment, should also have made his abode in Halifax. Mr. Wellington Johnston, of Montague, P.E. I., has in his possession the sabre with which his grand-father, an officer of the "Black Watch," helped to scoop the shallow grave of General Moore, at "noon of night." Charles Wolfe's lines have made the scene famous for all time:

"We buried him darkly at dead of night,  
The sods with our bayonets turning,  
By the struggling moonbeam's misty light,  
And the lantern dimly burning."

The "Endymion," was soon afterwards ordered to the North American Station. Dr. Hoffman married in 1811, and left the Navy. He settled in private practice in Halifax, and was for many years a leading member of his profession. He had several appointments under the Government, notably that of Surgeon-General to the Militia of Nova Scotia. He died at Halifax, 2nd April, 1850.

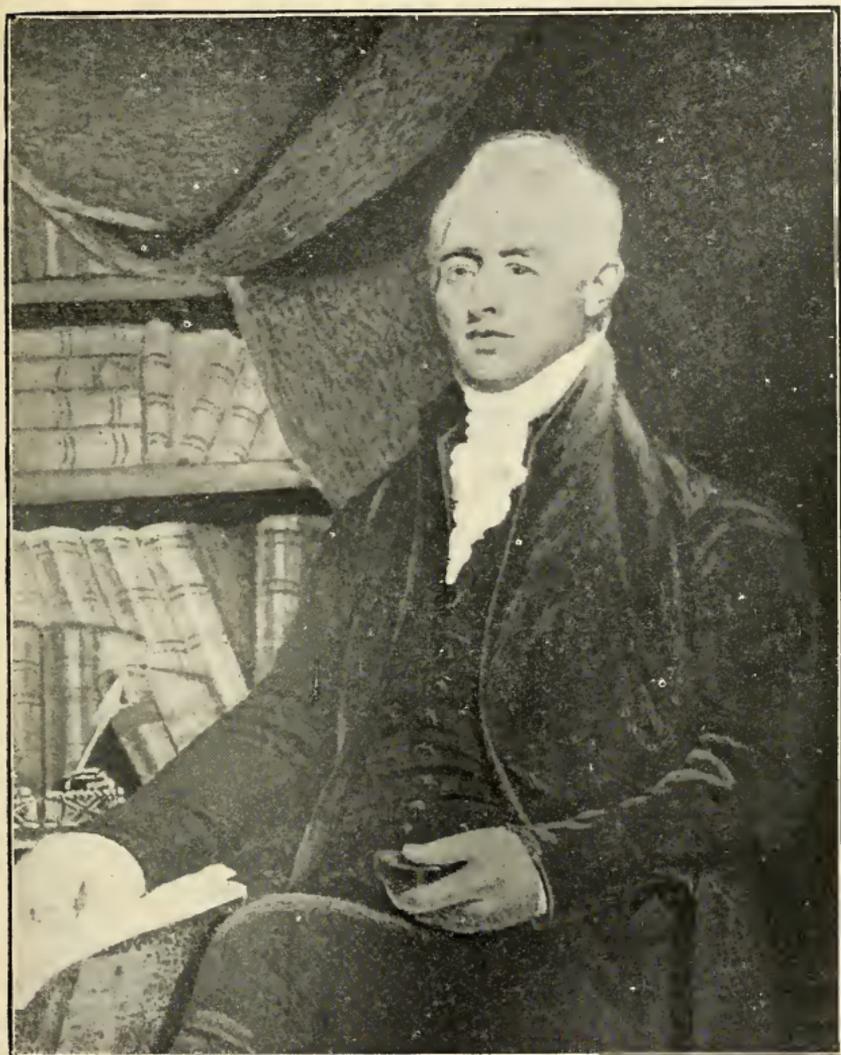
Memo' re property on west side of Pleasant Street, north of Morris Street prepared by Mr. Geo. E. E. Nichols, in regard to the site of the Bishop Inglis house on which it is proposed to place an historic tablet commemorating Sir John Inglis, "the hero of Lucknow."

Deed dated 21st November, 1808.

Hon. Andrew Belcher and Wife, Marianne, to Rt. Rev. Charles Inglis, Bishop of Nova Scotia, Consideration £1600.

Conveys a lot measuring 222 ft. on west side of Pleasant Street and bounded on the north by property occupied as Government stables and on the south by property of James Stewart. Lot being about 224 feet deep.

Deed dated 7th June, 1856.



**Lt. Colonel, the Hon. Richard John Uniacke, H. M. Attorney General  
for Nova Scotia.**

From a Miniature by J. Clow, 1831, in the possession of Lt. Col. Crofton  
Uniacke, Southsea, Eng.



Eliza Inglis, Widow and Extrx of Rt. Rev. Bishop John Inglis, Jane L. Inglis, Arabella P. Inglis, Catherine A. P. Inglis (spinsters) Elizabeth J. Kilvington, widow, all of Tunbridge Wells, England, Col. John E. W. Inglis, and Thomas C. Inglis, to Joseph P. Hagarty of Halifax, Professor of Music. Consideration £3000.

Conveys a lot on the west side of Pleasant Street, 222 ft. front by 202 ft. deep, bounded northerly by Govt. Stables west by Governor's Field so called and south by lands of James Moren.

Recites that the above grantors, with the exception of one Charles Inglis, are all of the Heirs at Law of Bishop John Inglis, and that Charles Inglis referred to has no interest in this property under his late father's will. Also that the property is the same as purchased by Bishop Inglis from Belcher and by him devised to his son, Bishop John Inglis.

The property later passed to one McCabe, and then to James Lithgow.

Mrs. Sarah E. Moren acquired her present lot in 1886.

There was formerly an old wooden house on this lot, and which I understand was the northern half of the Inglis house, the southern portion having been removed when the houses owned by Mrs. Wetherby and Dr. Beckwith were built.

Memo:—I am of the opinion that Bishop Inglis's property, afterwards Professor Hagarty's, was that upon which Mrs. Moren's dwelling now stands.

H. W. Blackadar.

20th November, 1912.

The President handed to the Archivist, a photograph of Richard John Uniacke, H. M. Attorney-General, and Member of the Executive Council of Nova Scotia, taken from a miniature by J. Clow, 1831, in the possession of his grandson, Lt.-Col. Crofton J. Uniacke, Southsea, England.

The Portrait printed on page 190, Collections, Vol. XVI, as Hon. R. J. Uniacke, is a portrait of his son, Hon. James Boyle Uniacke, which through an unfortunate error made by a member of the family, was printed by mistake. The true portrait will appear in Vol. XVII.

The President handed to the Archivist, two photographs, presented by Miss Ella MacNab, from paintings in her possession of (a) the Hon. Alexander MacNab, of "The Council of the Twelve," and (b) of the Hon. James MacNab.

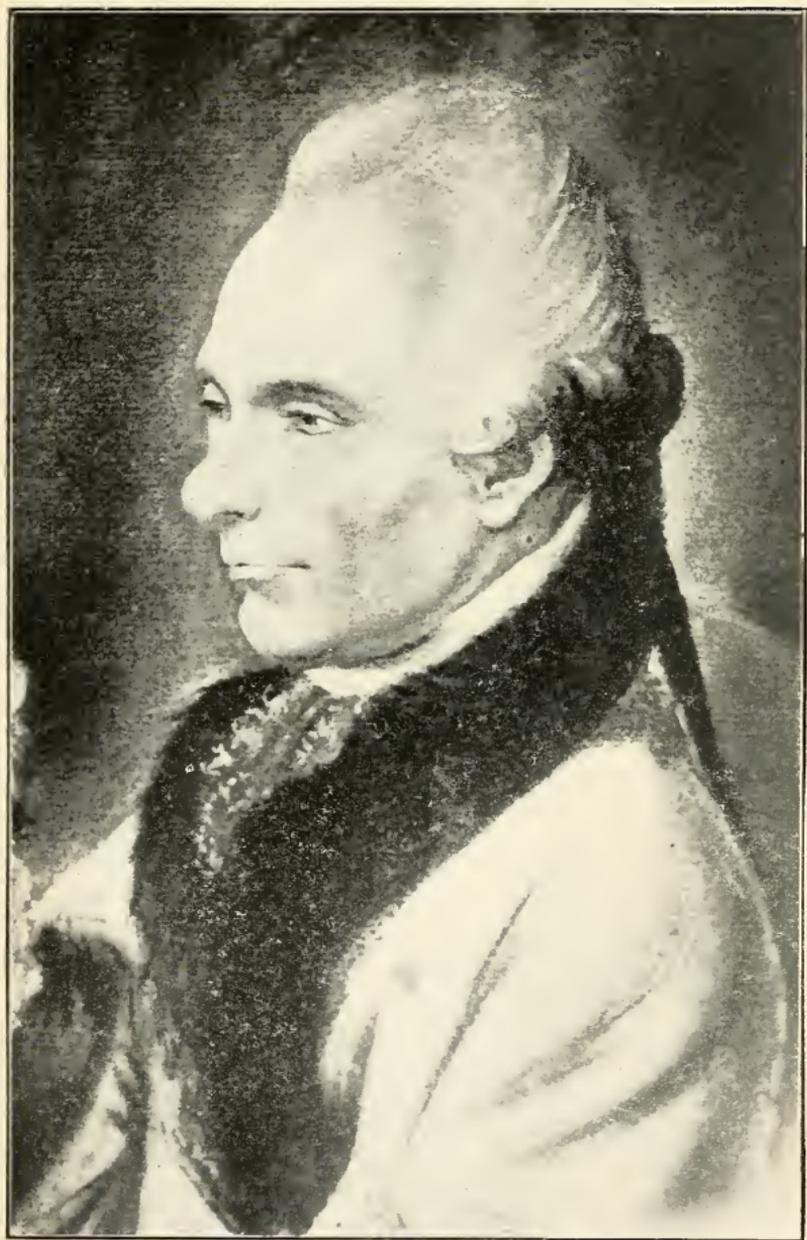
The President handed to the Archivist a photograph of Sir Joshua Reynolds' picture of *The Earl of Halifax* (after whom the City is named) now in the possession of Lord Curzon, obtained by Mr. A. M. Payne, through the kind offices of Major John Howard, Agent General of Nova Scotia.

The Municipal Council of Annapolis County sent a copy of a resolution approving of the Provincial government taking steps towards erecting a statue in memory of Hon. James W. Johnston. Dr. J. Johnston Hunt and Dr. David Allison moved that it be forwarded to the Provincial government and that they be urged to take action in this matter.

The Rev. John Forrest, D. D., announced that at the recent book sales in London at Sotheby's, two books brought very high prices:—Hakluyt's "Principal Navigations, Voyages and Discoveries," selling for \$2,000.00, and Captain John Smith's "General History of Virginia, New England and Summer Isles," selling for \$1,650.00. Duplicates of these two books are in the Akin's Collection, which is one of the most valuable on the American Continent.

The President announced that the co-operation of the Princess Louise Branch of the Imperial Order of the Daughters of the Empire has enabled the Society to arrange for the placing of a number of historic Tablets in Halifax. It is proposed to place one at an early date to commemorate Sir John Inglis 'the Hero of Lucknow,' who was born on the site of the house now occupied by Mrs. S. E. Moren, No. 310 Pleasant St. It





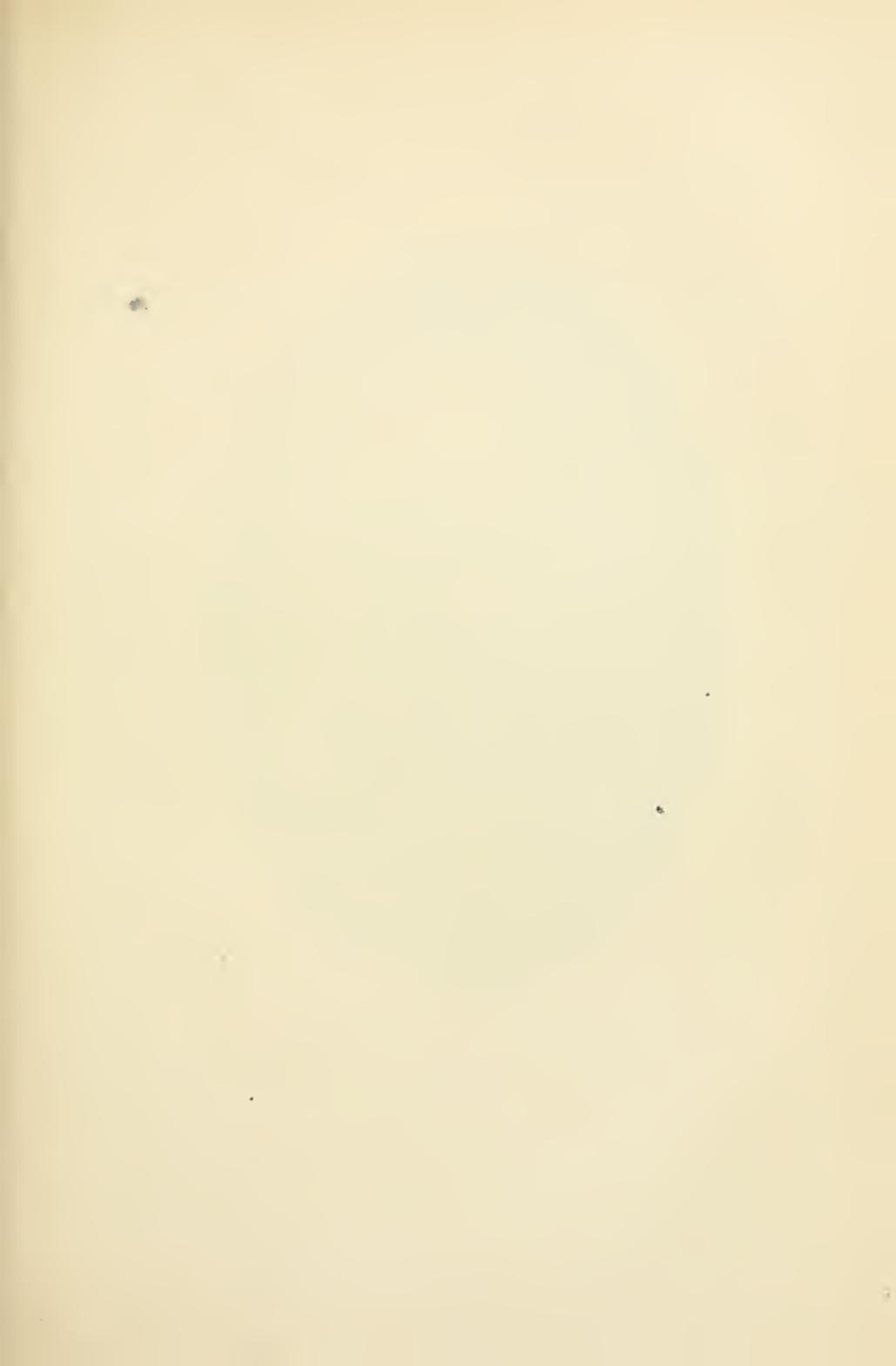
COLONEL JOSEPH FREDERICK WALLET DesBARRES.

is proposed to place Tablets to commemorate Admiral Provo Wallis, who became the 'Father of the British Fleet,' and also General Beckwith, a hero of Waterloo, by tablets in the Dockyard, where they were born. In this connection, the Hon. J. D. Hazen, head of the Department of the Naval Service, writes:—I am much interested in the proposal of your society to mark the historic sites in the province of Nova Scotia, and I shall be very glad indeed to give instructions that your Society should be allowed to place tablets in the Navy yard at Halifax. Admirers of the eminent statesman and jurist S. G. W. Archibald, will be glad to learn that there is every prospect that his great name will be honoured by the erection of a cast bronze tablet with a protrait medallion.

The descendants of Governor DesBarres, one of the most remarkable men connected with the history of Nova Scotia, are providing a Tablet to mark the place of his burial in St. George's Church, Halifax. DesBarres was Aide-de-camp to Wolfe at Quebec, the preceptor of Captain Cook the circumnavigator, and the founder of Sydney. His Atlantic Neptune, was the most remarkable book of charts ever published.

Mr. William W. Walsh, Barrister, has written suggesting that the old historic roads near Bedford Basin should be marked with inexpensive cairns, as some are now little better than paths, and there is danger that they may be absorbed by adjoining owners.







**HON. MR. JUSTICE BLISS,**  
**Judge Supreme Court, Nova Scotia.**  
(From a Water Colour by Miss Odell, Halifax.)

## MEMOIR OF THE LIFE OF THE HONORABLE WILLIAM BLOWERS BLISS.

By the HON. SIR CHARLES J. TOWNSHEND, Chief Justice of  
Nova Scotia.

Read 6th March, 1911.

---

The pure, and efficient administration of justice is one of the most essential features of good government. The Province of Nova Scotia from the first settlement has been very fortunate in the ability, learning, and integrity of the men who from time to time have occupied seats on the Supreme Court Bench. Jonathan Belcher, the first Chief Justice, was a man of exceptional ability and force of character. He not only inaugurated with great dignity our Supreme Court, and regulated its procedure, but by his assistance, and guided by his hand the foundations of our Provincial law were laid solidly, and well. Our knowledge of the Judges from his time up to the appointment of Sir Brenton Haliburton as Chief Justice in 1833 is very limited. From that date onwards we are in a position to form a fairly accurate estimate of the men who sat on the Supreme Court Bench. Of these Mr. Justice Bliss has always been regarded as one of the ablest and best. Amongst his contemporaries his high character and judicial acumen were universally recognised, and his reputation as a great judge survives as one of the most cherished traditions of the Bench and Bar. That reputation does not rest on tradition alone, but is to be found in the Law Reports on every page where his decisions are preserved giving abundant evidence of his great learning, and high qualifications for the office he so long filled to the great advantage of the Province.

But it is otherwise in regard to his early life, and his career at the Bar. As in the case of many other distinguished Nova Scotians prominent in our past history, no record has been kept, and such glimpses as we have are very meagre and unsatisfactory. In his case, of course all those who enjoyed his acquaintance, and were associated with him either at the Bar, in the Legislature or on the Bench have long since passed away, and there are few members of the profession now living who practised before him, or even remember him at all.

William Blowers Bliss came of Loyalist stock, that stock which has given so many able men to the public service in the different Provinces of Canada. He was the third son of Jonathan Bliss who during the American Rebellion was proscribed, and driven from his home in Massachusetts for his loyalty to his country, and his King. He went to England, and in 1785 was appointed by the Crown Attorney-General of the newly constituted Province of New Brunswick, about that date severed from the Province of Nova Scotia. That office he retained until he was appointed Chief Justice of New Brunswick in 1809, and remained Chief Justice until the time of his death. One of his classmates at Harvard, and great friend, was our former Chief Justice Blowers after whom Judge Bliss was named. His mother was Mary Worthington, a daughter of the Honorable Colonel Worthington, of Springfield, Massachusetts, an eminent lawyer, and a man of great influence. Mr. Justice Bliss was born in St. John, New Brunswick, on the 24th August, 1795, in the house, it is said, which formerly belonged to General Benedict Arnold of American Rebellion fame. Of his early years as I have said nothing is now known except that he was educated at King's College, Windsor, where he graduated at the early age of eighteen. He then went to England, and pursued his studies for the Bar at the Inner Temple under Sir William Wightman, afterwards an eminent English Judge.

After he had completed his studies and was called to the Bar in England great inducements were held out to him to remain and practise his profession there. Apparently his heart

was in Nova Scotia, and he resisted these brilliant offers, returning here where he practised at the Bar in Halifax until he was elevated to the Supreme Court Bench. As he was only thirty-nine years of age when he was promoted in 1834 he must have risen rapidly to the front, and commanded a large share in the business of the Courts. That he was so successful at such a comparatively early age is the best proof we can have of his preeminent ability in his profession and the confidence reposed in him by the public, and the government of the day.

As to this part of his career, his manner, his success in his cases, the cases in which he was engaged, and matters of a similar character we are absolutely without any information whatever, and we can only draw inferences from the fact of his early promotion to such a responsible position.

Like many other able lawyers of that day he sought political honors, and entered the House of Assembly in 1830 as Member for Hants County. His political career was comparatively brief, extending over four Sessions from 1830 to 1834. From the outset he appears to have taken an active and useful part in the debates of the Assembly, although he was not a frequent speaker. One of the measures to which he specially gave his attention was the granting of a Charter to the Bank of Nova Scotia. At that time there was only one Bank carrying on business in the Province. It was in the hands of a small number of wealthy people in Halifax known as the Halifax Banking Company, and some of the proprietors were members of the old Council. It would seem from the debates, and public meetings that this Bank used its financial power oppressively or at least not at all in the interests of the general public. To meet this state of affairs it was proposed to establish another Bank, for which a large stock list had been subscribed. As might have been anticipated the monopolists of the Halifax Banking Company threw every obstacle in the way. After a warm contest in the Assembly it passed that house, and was sent up to the Council for concurrence. Bliss, assisted chiefly by Alexander Stewart, contended vigorously for its passage in the lower House,

and was successful. But at the hands of the Council it met a different fate. That body did not reject the bill, but made such amendments as would have defeated the whole project. Of course this led to much indignation in the Assembly which promptly rejected the Council's amendments. After some further negotiations between the two Houses the Bill passed with some unimportant changes, and the new Bank was established.

Another subject which largely engaged his attention was the Provincial Currency which at that time seems to have been in a deplorable condition, seriously hampering trade. The discussions in the House were carried on at great length and there were wide differences of opinion as to the proper remedy. Mr. Bliss appears to have had very clear, and practical ideas on the subject which he advocated in many speeches with much success.

From his speech on that subject reported in the *Nova Scotian*, February 28th, 1833, I have made the following extract which will convey some idea of his polished, and incisive oratory in the House of Assembly. After dealing at great length with the pitiful state of the currency he says "The notes of the Halifax Bank are made payable in specie or in Provincial notes, and they claim the right to pay them at their own option. On this point I do not mean to offer my opinion, because it is not necessary for me to do so, but this much I will state, and I do it with some confidence, that if they are not payable absolutely in specie on demand, they are little else than a fraud upon the the public—they are utterly valueless, and no better than a blank piece of paper. If payment cannot be enforced in specie against those who issue them, neither can any action at law be maintained to recover the amount in Provincial paper; And what a miserable state of things it is; how loudly it calls for redress, when the greater part of the actual currency of the Country consists of notes of private individuals who are not legally liable to the holders for the amount which they promise to pay. But says the Honorable Member for Halifax, if these promises cannot be enforced by law, if no remedy can be had

against the Bankers by an action, still he has such confidence in their integrity and honor that he is willing to incur any risk, and take their paper freely, and without fear.

“His confidence does not weaken my argument, the validity of Bank notes must not depend on such a frail foundation. I want not the honor of any man, or any body of men pledged to me for such purposes. I will trust to the honor of no one, for it is not right that I should be referred to this, where I can better support my claims on legal rights, and legal abilities.

“Of the individuals who compose the Company I may probably be willing to speak in as high terms as that Honorable gentleman. With all of them I am sufficiently acquainted—at least to know the high character they possess—I shall certainly say nothing of any one which it would be unfit that he should hear. I would speak but of their conduct as bankers, and of the character of their paper and proceedings which are now subjects in which the public is concerned. I shall speak my sentiments with the boldness, and freedom which becomes a Member of this House, nor think an apology necessary. I am aware of their power, and influence, though I may not know the whole extent of them, and it is this very circumstance that makes it more necessary that this house should guard against their abuse. To leave with them the uncontrolled power of issuing such paper I consider to be highly dangerous. They may be above all suspicion, and be numbered among the honorable of the land, but cases may arise with respect to their notes in which even they may avail themselves of their exemption from a legal liability to pay them in any manner whatever.”

He concludes—“In this as in other matters we may all lie under the influence of immediate interest, or personal friendships, or be swayed by some other indirect, and perhaps unknown views. I may be equally liable to this suspicion, but in a measure in which the public interests are concerned, I think we should all form an opinion without regard to private considerations and with a desire to promote the public good.”

This was bold language to be used towards this banking Company then comprising the wealth and power of the Province, but Mr. Bliss was evidently no coward. On other questions before the Legislature he delivered his views with his usual force, and lucidity, but none of them are of sufficient importance to call for special notice except one. Alexander Stewart, member for Cumberland in the Session of 1834, made the first attack on the old Council by moving a series of resolutions condemning its composition, its methods of doing business with closed doors, and demanding that its executive functions should be separated from its Legislative powers—in other words that there should be a separate Legislative Council. Mr. Bliss, in a temperate and able speech, gave his support to these resolutions. Although they failed to carry at that time, later or when Mr. Bliss had left the Assembly for a seat on the Bench and Howe had entered the arena, resolutions of a much more drastic character were passed, and the Council as then constituted ceased to exist.

From notices in the press it would seem that Mr. Bliss came to the House as one of the old Tory Party, and it was supposed that he would ally himself with and uphold those who were interested in maintaining the privileges, and abuses of the existing regime, but both his friends and opponents were greatly surprised at the free and independent course he took in all matters, and discussions which came before the House.

During the period he sat in the Assembly some of the ablest and most distinguished men of the day were his colleagues, such as Archibald, James B. Uniacke, Alexander Stewart, C. Rufus Fairbanks, Beamish Murdock, John Young, Huntington and others, and it is quite evident from reading the proceedings of the House that he was able to hold his own amongst these brilliant and capable legislators.

In February, 1833, Chief Justice Blowers resigned, and Judge Halliburton, afterwards Sir Brenton Halliburton, was appointed Chief Justice. In February 1834, Judge Uniacke suddenly died, and in the following April Mr. Bliss was elevated to the

Supreme Court Bench in his place. This appointment terminated his brief political career. Thenceforth he was to occupy a place probably more congenial to his tastes and where he had the opportunity of displaying his eminent ability, sound legal training, and accurate knowledge of the law, where in the years which followed he became recognized as one of the ablest, if not the ablest Judge who ever occupied a seat on the Supreme Court Bench of Nova Scotia.

The appointment gave general satisfaction, and high hopes were entertained for improvement in the administration of justice throughout the Province. That such were the feelings and expectation can be gathered from the following notice of his appointment in the Nova Scotian newspaper April 17th, 1834, As Mr. Howe was the editor and proprietor, it probably reflects his opinion.

“There is nothing which more concerns the general welfare than the character of our legal tribunals, and therefore we may fairly congratulate the Country upon the appointment of William Blowers Bliss, Esq., to fill the vacancy on the Supreme Court Bench caused by the death of Judge Uniacke. Of the legal etiquette which is to govern such selections we know but little, but judging of the propriety of the choice from what we have seen of the individual we think it is one that will give great satisfaction to the country. Mr. Bliss as a scholar stood high in the estimation of his old classmates at College, and at the Bar his sound legal knowledge and penetrating intellect have earned for him much reputation. We judge more from what we have seen of him in the Assembly, where although he came in rather with the stain of toryism upon him, his conduct manly and consistent throughout, aided by his eloquence and varied knowledge was daily increasing his influence. We regret we shall hear him no more in the open field of popular discussion, but we hail his appointment as one step towards that improvement in the character of the Supreme Court, which heaven knows was badly wanted.”

This forms very strong testimony of his high estimation in the public eye at the very outset of his judicial career, and as we shall see later on he fully justified these opinions in the many years he sat on the Bench. Just here it will be of interest to give some idea of the person, and personal characteristics of this eminent Judge. He was of medium stature, spare figure with a highly intellectual face, very dignified in his bearing, not easy of approach, but at the same time very courteous to all. He had a high sense of the dignity of his office as a Judge. His manner, and address impressed this feeling on every member of the Bar, and official of the Court. When he entered the Court, and took his seat on the Bench the strictest etiquette was observed among the members of the Bar in the conduct of the cases tried before him. While patient to hear, and weigh all that was urged on either side of the case, he was very firm, and decided in his rulings, and there were few Counsel who would venture further argument once he had announced his decision. It must however be added that by the Bar he was always treated with the greatest respect and deference, due to their confidence in his great ability and learning—indeed he was recognised from the first as an able and accomplished jurist, which of itself accounts for the commanding position he held in the estimation of the profession. These few general facts I have gathered from those who practised before him of whom there are very few living, and some slight personal recollection of him when I was a student at law.

An anecdote has been related to me which shows that with all his reputed sternness in repressing any improper conduct in the Courts where he presided, he could be magnanimous in the face of what would ordinarily be treated as a grave offence. On one of the country circuits he tried, and reversed on the spot the decision of a magistrate, and in so doing expressed a wish that he had it in his power to make the magistrate pay all the costs. The magistrate who happened also to be an officer of the Court stepped forward, and said, "My Lord, I gave that decision according to what I thought was right. All I can say is that if the

Judges of the Supreme Court were made to pay the costs of all their erroneous decisions they would not have enough to pay for the coats on their backs."

Such a statement to a Judge in the face of the Court was of course a high contempt for which the Judge had the power to severely punish the magistrate by fine or imprisonment. Judge Bliss however said nothing, no doubt feeling that he had gone too far in making the observation he did.

As a further illustration of the masterly way in which he upheld the dignity, and decorum of the Court an old barrister relates that when first starting in his career, he was pitted in a case tried before Judge Bliss, against an able lawyer of rather bumptious character. In opening his address to the jury, this lawyer instead of remaining in his place, went to the front of the jury box emphasizing his speech by pounding the rail in front of the jury. Judge Bliss observing this sternly said to him, "Mr. —, take your place at the Bar, sir, and address the jury." There was a moment of hesitation on the part of the barrister, but one look at the Judge was enough, and he quietly resumed his proper place continuing his speech. On the same trial my informant says his opponent called a witness to the stand and to his surprise and dismay Judge Bliss recognized him as an old servant, shook hands with him inquiring about himself and family. As it was a question of disputed facts, he thought this looked bad for his side fearing that the Judge's faith in his old servant might unconsciously influence his mind, but all fears on that score were dispelled when the Judge came to address the jury. His charge was so clear, every word of evidence so clearly sifted, and explained without the semblance of bias that he eventually won his verdict.

Another somewhat amusing instance of the fearless mode in which he dispensed justice, and let down even leaders of the Bar is told. A very eminent Counsel was endeavouring to set aside a conviction made by a magistrate for the illegal sale of liquor. After patiently hearing the case to the end Judge Bliss

said to the Counsel, "Mr. —, I presume I am not bound by the amount of the penalty imposed by the magistrate?" The learned Counsel no doubt thinking he intended to reduce the amount of the fine quickly rose and said, "Oh, certainly not, my Lord." "Then," said the Judge, "I will just double the amount of the fine, and dismiss the appeal with costs to be paid by your client."

As already pointed out he was very strict in upholding the dignity of the Court. Solicitors and barristers were soon made conscious that no unseemly conduct nor questionable transactions would escape his eagle eye. He was very severe on professional misconduct, and jealous for the honour of the bar. As an instance told me by one who was present, he was holding court in one of the County towns where it came under his observation that a solicitor not bearing a very good reputation had on the Docket of Cases for trial an unusual number in which he was acting either for Plaintiff or Defendant of a very frivolous and dubious character. In his address to the jury he took occasion to administer a scathing rebuke. "If," he said, "my opinion should have any weight with the yeomanry of this County I should advise in case any of them should consider himself to have suffered wrong at the hands of another, and should determine to seek redress, that he should consult some respectable attorney," emphasizing "respectable" by a slight pause after and before the word, and significantly inclining his head as he uttered the sentence. His high shrill voice—clear as a bell—was eminently adapted to convey his meaning.

Another instance of his determination to put down any unworthy or undignified conduct occurred before the full Bench when all the Judges were present. A leading barrister in the course of his argument related, no doubt as he thought, for their amusement a somewhat smutty story. The other Judges smiled, and said nothing but Judge Bliss at once addressing the Counsel said, "Mr. —, If you dare, repeat that

story, or anything of the kind in my presence I will order your commital for contempt."

From these anecdotes one would infer that he was a very severe, and stern Judge—unpopular with the Bar, and the people. Such however was not the case, as we know from tradition, from the press of the day and from addresses presented to him. On the contrary he was universally esteemed, and beloved by all who came in contact with him. His standard of life was high, and occupying the high position he did, he deemed it his duty to impress upon all those who came under his influence the same spirit and rule of conduct.

I have tried to get other anecdotes of incidents happening on trials before Judge Bliss, but without success, as those who could have related them are all gone. The few I have given were characteristic, and help us to form some idea of his methods in conducting trials which took place in the Courts before him.

The record of the judicial career of Judge Bliss is principally to be found in the Nova Scotia Law Reports. Notices of trials in which he was engaged occasionally appears in the press of the day, but hardly full enough to convey any correct idea of the manner in which he dealt with the case before him. It appears from one of these notices that he first took his seat on the Bench after his appointment in a criminal trial with the Chief Justice, and Judge Wilkins in May, 1834. There were no Court reporters at that time, nor for some years after his elevation, so that with some few exceptions we know little of his early decisions between 1834 and 1853. About the latter date, the late James Thompson, a barrister of the Court, gathered some of the Judgments of the Supreme Court given in past years, and published them in a volume now known as No. 1 Supreme Court Reports. Amongst these are several from Mr. Justice Bliss, and from that time onward until he resigned his judgments are included in all the reports terminating in the second volume of Oldright. In a brief

memoir such as this no extended reference to these valuable decisions can be given.

One of the best, and most important decisions of Mr. Justice Bliss was in the well known case of Scots vs. Henderson in 1843, reported in Thompson 3, Nova Scotia, p. 136, in which he differed from Chief Justice Halliburton. The question before the Court was the right of the Crown to grant land where another was in possession without first taking proceedings to expel the intruder. It is of great length—too long to give in full, but as a good specimen of his style I have made the following extract:

“The law, he says, has carefully guarded the possession of the Crown, and nothing can change, or limit that possession or interfere with or prevent the plenary exercise of its rights resulting therefrom till the law itself is in this respect changed—that has been done by the Statute already mentioned (21 Jac. 1 Cap. 14) which has broken in upon the common law principles, and recognised an adverse possession against the Crown after twenty years, and in all cases which fall within the operation of the Statute, that is where the adverse possession has continued for twenty years, the Crown cannot grant, until it has filed proceedings against the intruder. In all other cases, the Common law principle that the possession of the Crown cannot be disturbed by an intruder remains in full force, and consequently its right to grant, notwithstanding the possession of the intruder, cannot I think be impugned.” He then adds in conclusion “I have thus gone at large into the consideration of this question from its importance to the Country, and because I find an opinion widely different from my own is still entertained by two of the Bench. My respect for them with whose views I am unfortunately unable to agree has made it the more proper for me to examine the subject with attention, and to seek out every authority which I could find that had any bearing on this point. This I have done to the best of my power. It has impressed me with a very strong conviction the grounds of which I have just given that when the Crown has

never parted with its original title, it retains the full power of granting lands, notwithstanding another may have possessed himself in the meantime, and be in occupation of such lands, except the power of the Crown has been restrained, and limited by Statute. In the present case no Statute has that operation, and effect, and without entering into any consideration of the Policy of the law where it is my business only so state what I conceive to be the law, I am of opinion that the direction of his Lordship the Chief Justice was in this respect incorrect."

This opinion abounds in legal authority showing most thorough research, in support of the conclusion reached, and although a recent decision in the Supreme Court of Canada affirmed by the Privy Council on appeal has held that that part of his opinion which limited the Crown's right to grant where there was adverse possession for twenty years was erroneous yet in the particular case under consideration he was undoubtedly right.

There are so many reported cases in which he gave elaborate and important judgments that it is a matter of difficulty to select those which deserve especial notice. In the well known case of *Woodberry vs Gates*, N. S. R. 255, will be found a clear exposition of the law bearing on conventional boundaries between adjoining owners. "The law," he says, "is ever the guardian of good faith, and interposes by a wholesome rule to prevent its violation. Who does not see that it would be a breach of good faith if these admissions, and this agreement could be thus set aside? The affairs of life could not be carried on with safety unless such conduct could be relied on with perfect certainty. It would doubtless be more prudent, better in every respect, if the parties in such cases executed deeds to perfect their intentions, but men—especially in these remote situations do not generally conduct their business with a legal adviser at their side, and though in such matters technical and legal difficulties may interfere to defeat their arrangements, the law will generally be found subservient to justice as I think it is here."

In Freeman vs Morton in the same volume at p. 340 will be found a thorough discussion of the rights of tenants in Common—in itself a valuable treatise on that very important branch of the law.

Hill vs Fraser, in the same book, p. 294, presents an admirable opinion on the right of a contractor to damages, where a false, though *bona fide* representation had been made to the contractor. "The plan," he says, "does as has been already stated most certainly exhibit and represent that beneath the water there was a substratum into which the piles could be driven, and the specification required that the work should be performed by driving piles into this substratum, and the contract was made to carry out this work. The existence of this substratum is thus an essential ingredient of it,—without it not only would the contract not have been made but the work could not have been done, and the Crown would have stipulated for an impracticable, and impossible performance. Now I must confess that under such a contract, I incline to the opinion that there is an implied warranty on the part of the Crown that such a substratum was there. I must not be understood to say that any mere representation made *bona fide* by one party to another by which he has been induced to enter into a contract can amount to a warranty, for that would be holding that misrepresentation without fraud would give a right of action in the very face of the authorities. I have cited to the contrary. But the distinction appears to me to be between the representation which precedes, and induces the contract and the representation embodied and forming part of the contract itself. And I cannot but think that whatever is represented by one party in a contract of so essential a nature that the very contract if founded upon it, and cannot be carried into effect without it, amounts to a warranty of the matter as represented, and this appears to me to be the case under the first agreement."

I might continue to cite passages from many other of his judgments, but this is wholly unnecessary. These examples

have been given to show their general character, and to enable us to appreciate the clear logical mind which enabled him to express his views on any subject he had under consideration. The choice language, and high tone which permeates all his deliverances on important matters under adjudication is especially noticeable.

From a note of the reporter in 2 Oldright, 179, it appears that Judge Bliss was absent from illness during the whole Michaelmas Term, 1865, and so far as I can ascertain he never was present in the full Court after that date—certainly there are no further decisions of his to be found. I have heard it stated that he presided at the October Term of 1866 at Windsor, and if so that must have been the last occasion on which he went on circuit. Ill health compelled him at this time to give up all active work in the Courts. In 1869 he resigned his seat on the Bench after thirty-four years service, which caused general regret throughout the Province. The feelings of the Bar on this occasion are eloquently expressed in an address presented to him with the accompanying remarks of the Attorney-General at that time Martin I. Wilkins.

#### **Presentation of address to Judge Bliss.**

At 1 1-2 o'clock today the Committee appointed to present the address of the members of the Bar to Mr. Justice Bliss attended at his residence where they were received by the Judge, Mrs. Bliss, their daughters Mrs. Odell, Mrs. Binney, and Miss Bliss and his granddaughter Miss Odell. Mr. Odell and the Rev. Mr. Bliss, his son-in-law, were also present.

The Committee, attended by many of the barristers, were received in the drawing room.

The Attorney General addressed the worthy Judge as follows:

“Mr. Justice Bliss:

We have been commissioned by the members of the Bar resident in this city to beg the favor of your acceptance, on

your retirement from the Bench, of an address expressive of their high opinion of your merits as a Judge of the Supreme Court, in which you presided for a great many years with distinguished credit to yourself, benefit to the province, and honor to the profession.

It will afford you gratification to be informed that this testimonial of respect has been signed by every member of the profession in Halifax, without a solitary exception, and that several gentlemen who are absent on the circuits have made use of the telegraph to request that their names might be added to the address, which has been attended to.

I now beg permission to read this address which has been dictated by a steady regard to the truth, and is entirely free from every taint of flattery or exaggeration.

To the Honorable William B. Bliss, etc.

We, the Attorney General, Queen's Counsel, and other members of the legal Profession, resident in the city of Halifax, would have taken an earlier opportunity of addressing you had there been any official announcement of your retirement from the Bench of the Supreme Court, where you presided for upwards of thirty-four years, with the most exemplary judicial integrity.

Your resignation is viewed by the profession and all who are capable of forming a just estimate of your eminent qualifications for the administration of justice, as a serious public misfortune.

We have great pleasure in testifying that you invariably discharged the duties of a Judge with enlightened ability, and untiring industry, and, while your conduct on the bench was always characterized by the strictest impartiality, as regards the suitors in court, your bearing towards the members of the bar was distinguished for dignity and courtesy, and you deservedly enjoyed the confidence, respect and esteem of the Profession.

You may rest assured that we have witnessed your retirement as a consequence of the infirmity of your bodily health, while your intellectual powers are entirely unimpaired, with cordial sympathy and unfeigned regret, and that on your return to private life you carry with you our best wishes for your present and future happiness.

After reading the address the Attorney-General proceeded:

I have but to add, Sir, that I deem it a very great privilege and honor to be in a position to deliver into your hands, in the presence of these witnesses, this valuable instrument, which has been executed with singular unanimity by a body of gentlemen who have enjoyed the best opportunity of estimating your merits as a public magistrate, and I am satisfied that this demonstration of their admiration of your public conduct will afford, in your retirement, the most soothing and agreeable conviction that you have descended from a lofty public station, which you adorned with every virtue, into the ranks of private life with not merely an unsullied but a remarkably brilliant reputation.

The following is the reply of Judge Bliss:

Mr. Attorney-General, and Gentlemen:

I thank you most sincerely for your kind and affectionate address. I value it, believe me, very highly.

It was in the presence of the Metropolitan Bar that my official life was chiefly spent; you have thus become familiarly acquainted with its character, and with the manner in which its duties have been discharged. To have obtained then from those so competent to judge and so interested in the matter, such a testimony to my services and conduct, with the generous expression of their regret on my retirement, may well fill me with an honest pride.

I was indeed already aware of your good will and disposition—though I could never have anticipated so marked and

gratifying a proof of your regard—for on the Bench I have invariably experienced from you and the whole Bar the utmost courtesy and kindness, which I take this opportunity of gratefully acknowledging.

And yet when I turn back to my past career I see in it many shortcomings and failings—to give them no other name—which even indulgent self love cannot overlook, though you have been good enough to forget them in the flattering language of your address.

Many changes have taken place since I became a Judge; some have thrown a dark shadow around me. I have seen every one of my early associates on the Bench, with whom I have lived in the closest intimacy, pass away—and many valued friends from among yourselves removed by death. I may also remark as another result of my extended term of office, that not a few are now in practice who were not born when I first occupied a seat on the Bench.

It was, however, time for me to retire. Infirmities increasing with increasing age and broken health, had rendered me unequal to the labors of my office: and much as I loved my profession, and reluctant as I was to leave it, a sense of duty demanded that I should make way for some other better qualified to fill my place. Could I have accomplished it, my retirement would have taken place some years earlier.

And now, gentlemen, with renewed thanks for your parting kindness, your good opinion and good wishes, I take a final and affectionate leave of the profession in whose welfare I shall never cease to feel a lively interest. For yourselves, I wish you individually every happiness and success, and for the profession to which we belong I add my earnest hope that it may still be ever distinguished for learning, talents, and integrity.

Thus terminates the judicial career of William Blowers Bliss amidst the genuine regret of the people, and more especi-

ally of the profession amongst whom he had faithfully laboured for so many years, whose respect, and affection he had so fully retained. Time has amply justified the high encomiums passed on him as a man and as a Judge—His works speak for themselves.

It now remains briefly to refer to another side of his life—his scholarly tastes, and attainments. Educated at King's College he became a ripe, and excellent classical scholar. This may be seen everywhere in his reported decisions which are models of diction and apt language for conveying his meaning. He was a lover of the poets, and at one time delivered a series of lectures on the early English bards. So imbued was he with classical lore, that he translated into English verse printed only for private circulation some of the most beautiful odes of Catullus, Horace, and Ovid. These translations he tells us in a short preface were principally made after his retirement to fill in his leisure time. I am permitted to give one or two extracts from this little volume which must fill us with admiration of his elegant taste and accurate classical scholarship.

The first is a translation from the Roman poet Catullus entitled "Sacrifices at a brother's Tomb."

"Through many a land, o'er many a sea I come  
To sacrifice, dear brother, at thy tomb.  
With these last rites to drop the unheeded tear,  
And call that name, thou canst no longer hear  
But oh my brother since by fate's decree  
Alas too early thou was torn from me,  
Accept this offering to thy honored shade  
By custom sanctioned, by affection paid,  
And while these frequent tears, my sorrows tell,  
Take, dearest brother, this my last farewell."

In a different vein is this translation of a Nuptial Song of Catullus—

To the new made bridegroom's home  
Bids its willing mistress come

Love possessing all her mind  
Love with every thought entwined  
Round the elm trees wandering  
As the clasping ivies cling.

Ye too—spotless virgins—ye  
Fair, and lovely who shall all  
Your own bridal day ere long  
Join with us the measured song  
Hymen—hasten, Hymen thou  
Guardian of the nuptial vow.

Pleased your summons to attend  
Hither he his course shall bend  
He who heart to heart unites  
Source of purest love's delights  
He whose smiles alone can shed  
Blessings on the Nuptial bed.

Mighty God of wedded love!  
To what other power above  
Should so apt the lover raise  
Votive Prayer, and song of praise  
Half so frequent at whose shrine  
Bends the votary as at thine."

These are but two specimens out of many others taken from this little volume, but they are sufficient to convey to us the cultured taste and refined scholarship of the author—It is often difficult, as any classical scholar knows, to render into good English prose some of the most touching and beautiful odes of the Roman poets, but to turn them into good English verse requires the imagination of a poet and a thorough mastery of the language of the original.

Judge Bliss survived for five years after his retirement from the Bench. His health did not improve, and I cannot find that he took any part in public affairs thereafter. He probably felt what all men feel who have led an active and



**"Fort Massey."**  
**RESIDENCE OF HON. W. B. BLISS.**  
(View from the Garden)



busy life, the weariness of having nothing to do. During the summer months while on the Bench, and probably afterwards he enjoyed his country residence at Windsor where in its lovely surroundings he could find many mementos of his College life.

Judge Bliss principally resided in Halifax where he was a valued and prominent member of society due to his high position, and his pure and elevated character. He was a devoted member of the Church of England, and was one of the first contributors to the beautiful Cathedral so recently constructed. He gave the land for the purpose on which it was at first proposed to build it. His wife was a Miss Anderson by whom he had seven children—three sons and four daughters—One of the daughters was married to the late Bishop Binney another to the late Senator Odell, and the third to Bishop Kelly of Newfoundland, the fourth died young.

He died at Halifax in March 16th, 1874, at the ripe age of seventy-nine. I cannot better conclude this brief and imperfect memoir than by giving in full the resolutions of the Bar Society, and of the House of Assembly of the Province, which in glowing, and truthful language set forth his merits, and the estimation in which he was held by those who lived at the time, and knew him best.\*

At a special meeting of the Bar, held at the law library on Tuesday, the 17th March, 1874, the following resolutions were unanimously adopted:

I. That this meeting desires to express its regret at the demise of the late lamented Judge Bliss and its appreciation of his distinguished services to the profession and to the public at large. He had for the last five years retired from the active duties of life, but his long and brilliant career marked by the skill of the accomplished advocate and the integrity and impartiality of the able judge cannot be readily forgotten.

---

\*The *British Colonist*, Halifax, of March 17, 1874, also gives an interesting obituary notice of Judge Bliss.

Educated for his profession in Nova Scotia, called to the bar in England, practising successfully as a barrister in this province for years and then elevated to the Bench at a comparatively early age, he was able to bring to the discharge of its duties a vigorous intellect, fitly trained to perform the important functions of his high office.

Of his success as a judge the best proofs are to be found in the able decisions which he has given, and which are valued by the profession as the best exponents of the law of the land.

Dying at a ripe old age, he has left behind him a name that will be long remembered and works that will "follow him."

2. That a copy of the foregoing resolution be sent to the widow and family of the deceased Judge, and that as a token of respect the members of the bar do attend his funeral in a body.

Resolutions regarding the death of Judge Bliss.

(Morning Chronicle, March 20, 1874.)

Hon. Attorney-General said he merely rose for the purpose of discharging a duty which was incumbent upon him from the position he occupied. It was always a matter of regret and a subject for sympathy when men of character and integrity who had held high positions at the Bar and the Bench were taken away, men who had reflected credit upon their profession and adorned every station they had occupied. Within a few days he had learned, as the whole country had learned, with regret that Judge Bliss had passed away. There was no one who knew of the high character which Judge Bliss had borne in public and private life but would be ready to give expression to the sentiments contained in the following resolution:

*Resolved*, that the House have heard with deep regret of the death of the Hon. William Blowers Bliss, formerly a member of this House a prominent practicing member of the Bar of

Nova Scotia and for many years one of our leading Judges; upright, honest and talented. This province sustained a great loss when he retired from the Bench.

*Resolved*, that this House will adjourn on Thursday next to attend the funeral in a body, and that a copy of these resolutions be sent to the widow and family of the deceased.

Mr. Blanchard said he had great pleasure in seconding that Resolution. He had had the pleasure since 1842, when he went to the Bar first of practicing before His Honor Judge Bliss; and he could say that if ever Nova Scotia had a Judge of integrity, knowledge and ability that was the man. He was not saying anything about the other Judges but in Judge Bliss there was something above and beyond all he had yet mentioned. He was a Christian and a good man in every sense of the words. To pass and carry out this Resolution was as little as this House could do. Judge Bliss had long been here as a member and had adorned the debates and business of the House with his fine talents and high character. He (Mr. B.) was glad now and then of these oases in the deserts, these rosebushes among thorns, these occasions when all could lay aside their differences and unite to do honor to an able and good man. This was one of them. He knew of no man who had gone to the happy world above whose departure should be more regretted.

Mr. DesBrisay said he had great pleasure in supporting the Resolution which had been moved by the Hon. Attorney-General and seconded by the Hon. leader of the opposition. The good name and fame of Judge Bliss were not confined to Halifax, but was known throughout Nova Scotia. He was a man of rare talent, of finished education, of sterling integrity and of the highest principle. He was indeed what the poet calls "A christian, the highest style of man."

The resolution was then passed unanimously.





Kans 29<sup>th</sup> Sep:  
1853  
This has been a glorious day for the British arms  
F. Williams

GENERAL SIR FENWICK WILLIAMS, Bart., (1799-1888.)



NOTES ON  
THOMAS WILLIAMS OF ANNAPOLIS ROYAL.

By JAMES D. RITCHIE.

A few Notes correcting inaccuracies which have been published.

I am writing these notes as I think any information published concerning the old inhabitants of Nova Scotia should be as accurate as possible and as time rolls on it is getting harder in many cases to get the facts.

The life history of Thomas Williams is interesting not only because he was one of the early inhabitants of Annapolis Royal but also because he was the grandfather of Sir Fenwick Williams of Kars, one of Nova Scotia's most noted and illustrious sons.

In Calnek's History of Annapolis County, the writer evidently did not have a number of facts concerning Thomas Williams to refer to. In it, it is stated that Thomas Williams "may have been born in Annapolis." This is merely conjecture as there seems to be no reliable information on this point. He may have been born in the British Isles for there is the fact that as a young man he served in the Austrian Netherlands.

By order of the 3rd and 12th June, 1746, King George II authorized and required that a Train of Artillery should be forthwith provided to attend the Forces ordered to the Austrian Netherlands. In this train, Commanded by Col. Jonathan Lewis, Thomas Williams was appointed "Conductor of Stores" and received the allowance of two shillings and sixpence per diem. This Warrant is dated the 21st day of June, 1746, and is signed by John, Duke of Montagu, who held the office of Master General of the Ordnance, besides other high positions. Thomas Williams' next promotion came in the following year when, under the same order of George II, he was appointed "Clerk of the Stores" to attend said train. This appointment carried an

increase of pay to four shillings per diem. This Warrant is also signed by the Duke of Montagu and is dated the 2nd day of January, 1747. Williams' next appointment or promotion came when he was stationed at Annapolis Royal. He was made "Clerk of the Cheque" at the same rate of pay as he had been receiving as "Clerk of the Stores." This Warrant is dated the 18th day of April, 1750, and is signed by the Rt. Hon. Sir John Ligonier, K. C. B., and the rest of the Principal Officers of His Majesty's Ordnance "by virtue of authority given to them in the absence or vacancy of a Major General of the Ordnance." Shortly after this we find Thomas Williams appointed "Store-keeper" at Annapolis Royal with pay at five shillings per diem. The Warrant is signed by Sir. John Ligonier and others, and is dated the 22nd day of January, 1750. This is evidently an error, and should be 1751 as on the Warrant it states "in the twenty-fourth year of his Majesty's reign." After serving as "Store-keeper" for eleven years Thomas Williams was appointed "Commissary of His Majesty's Stores of War and Provisions" for the garrison of Annapolis Royal. This Warrant was issued at Head-Quarters at New York and signed, by His Excellency Sir Jeffery Amherst, Major-General and Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's Forces in North America, on the 10th day of May, 1762. The scale of pay is not mentioned.

Thomas Williams' wife was a daughter of Captain Amhurst. Edward Amhurst Esq., on the 25th day of February, 1748-9 received a Commission as Captain Lieutenant to "that Company in Our Regiment of Foot Commander by our trusty and well beloved Richard Phillipps, Esq., Lieut. General of our Forces". This Regiment of Foot was, I believe, afterwards known as the 40th Regiment.

I note that Capt. Amhurst's and Sir. Jeffery Amherst's names are spelled differently.

The writer in Calnek's History is evidently doubtful as to the date of birth of Sir Fenwick Williams. Among the num-

ber of letters written by Sir Fenwick Williams to my father, the late Mr. Justice J. Norman Ritchie, and now in my possession, is one dated December 4th, 1873. This he commences by saying "I am 73 to-day." This information at first hand puts the date of his birth as December 4th, 1800, and the date of his Baptism must be February 1801, not 1800.

Jas. D. Ritchie.

Halifax, N. S., December 16th, 1912.

In regard to Sir Fenwick's birth-day I had all his correspondence in my hands, and he speaks very often of his birth-day being December 21st but in one letter which is relied upon by those who fix it in December 1800 he undoubtedly makes a mistake of a year in his age, which I have explained in my pamphlet. The date of his baptism as recorded by Mr. Bailey must be correct as to the year. The year date from (1799 to 1800) had just been changed from 1799 to 1800. If he was born December 1800 and the first entry was an error we would expect to see the baptism repeated in February 1801.

A. W. Savary.

December 30th, 1912.

Mr. Ritchie raised a question about the spelling of Major Amherst's name. Burke's General Armory gives the name Amherst or Amhurst. The General of later date was Amherst but I incline to think the father-in-law of Williams spelt it Amhurst. They were probably distant branches of the same family. A copy of Major A's will is expanded on the probate records of Halifax. It is however signed by his mark as he could not write being paralysed. I did not notice particularly how the name was spelt in the will. His autograph may be in the Archives.

A. W. Savary.

Annapolis Royal, April 7th, 1913.





"THE FLETCHER STONE," YARMOUTH, N. S.



"THE BAY VIEW STONE," YARMOUTH, N. S.



A SHORT NOTE ON  
THE YARMOUTH "RUNIC STONE".

By MOSES H. NICKERSON.

The stone usually referred to as above was discovered nearly a hundred years ago on the western side of Yarmouth Harbor. It is a species of whin, I think, with nothing peculiar about its shape, indicating that it had been changed by man. It weighs probably 150 lbs., and its flatter side measures about eighteen inches long by 7 inches wide. On the side mentioned, is the so called inscription, the characters of which are a little over an inch—vertical measure, for there is no principle of formation common to more than two of them, and they differ radically from all ancient phonetic symbols, which with few exceptions, have a "staff" ground work.—These marks are not deeply cut (if indeed they were made by man), but they are quite distinct.

After Mr. Phillips of Philadelphia, a student of antiquities I believe, had examined the stone, and published his presudo-translation, which gave the curiosity a wide vogue, I went to see the stone, in order to satisfy myself if possible, what truth there might be in Mr. Phillips strange version, for I doubted its accuracy from the first. My examination was made about 20 years ago. I was not then acquainted with the Runes of any era, but have made quite a study of them since. My reason for doubting the suppositious character of the marks, was that the Norse legends of a slightly later origin were written, not in the old Runes, but modified Roman letters, which soon came into use after the Icelanders adopted christianity. Again, it seemed highly improbable that there should be any person on board those Icelandic Galliot's sufficiently instructed to write at all, an accomplishment of which several of the powerful Kings of Northern Europe could not boast, in that age.

After I acquired a knowledge of the Norse runes my suspicions were almost confirmed. To make certain, however, I

resolved to consult the greatest living authority on the subject. To that end, I got a print of the stone and marks from Mr. Vickery, the Yarmouth book-seller, and submitted it in person to my friend, Dr. Leach, instructor in Scandinavian, at Cambridge Mass, with whom I had formerly been talking about the "Vinland Voyages." Along with it, I handed him a note of my own, showing what I conceived should be the runic signs of that period 1007 A. D. Dr. Leach showed both of those papers to Prof. Magnus Olsen, of Christiania, Norway, who is deeply read in runics, and whose word thereon is final. In a short time his answer came, returning my note, enclosed. He wrote:

"Tegnene paa denne Afbildning er ikke Runer, og har som Mr. Nickerson, i den medsendte Notits antyder yderst liden Lighed med Runer. De gjør paa mig Antryck af at vaere Naturspil, og jeg vilde derfor tilraade at "Runestenen" blev undersgöt af en Geolog."

Which I translate:

"The marks on this "copy" are not runes; and as Mr. Nickerson, in his enclosed note points out, they have very little likeness to runes. They strike me as being a freak of nature, and would therefore advise that the "Runic (?) Stone be examined by a geologist."

This seems to settle the matter so far as anything Norse is concerned. A closer scrutiny might yet lead to a decision as to whether the marks are natural or artificial. I am not aware that anything is being done in that direction. Meantime the stone is in the Public Library at Yarmouth and it might possibly be procured for the Museum at Halifax. I will bear it in mind, and make enquiry there at the first opportunity.

## Remarks on the Fletcher and Related Stones of Yarmouth, N. S.

By HARRY PIERS, Curator of the Provincial Museum.

The so-called "Fletcher Stone," which has been the cause of much speculation, was discovered about 1812 by Dr. Richard Fletcher, a retired army surgeon, who had settled at Yarmouth in 1809 and died in 1819. It was found close to the shore on a point of land which runs out between the outlet of Chegoggin Flats (Salt Pond) and the head of Yarmouth Harbor, on the western side of the latter. It is said to measure about 31x20x13 inches, and to weigh about 400 pounds. It soon attracted attention, and remained near Fletcher's house for some sixty years, when it was transported to the east side of the harbor. This was doubtless at the time that Dr. Henry S. Poole, then Inspector of Mines, obtained it to have it forwarded to the Provincial Museum at Halifax, but by some error it was not shipped from Yarmouth. Subsequently it passed to Samuel N. Ryerson of Yarmouth.

Sir Daniel Wilson in 1865 refers to it briefly in his "Prehistoric Man." It was brought very prominently into notice in 1884, when Henry Phillips, Jr., wrote a paper dealing with it, in which he claims that the inscription is a Runic one, and even goes so far as to translate it as "Hako's son addressed the men." This Hako he identifies as one of Karlsefne's expedition of 1007. (See Proc. Amer. Phil. Society, *xxi*, 1884, p. 491). Phillips's theory was at the time generally accepted, and is still believed in by the less-informed public. Brown in his "Yarmouth" (1889) follows and supports Phillips.

The theory that the inscription is a Runic one, was apparently first shattered by Sir Daniel Wilson, who in a monograph on "The Vinland of the Northmen," published in the Transactions of the Royal Society of Canada for 1890

(sect. 2, pp. 116-120), deals with the stone at considerable length, and states that the supposed inscription does not agree with Runic ones, nor is it a variation of the characters of the Scandinavian futhork. Mr. Nickerson's paper now makes this conclusive.

Furthermore, K. G. T. Webster failed to identify Yarmouth with the description of the places visited during Karlsefne's voyage, and after reviewing the various claims made, that it was an Indian, a Phoenician, a Norse, or a French inscription, and discarding all, comes to the somewhat unwilling conclusion that we must of necessity decide that it was made by the later English, either for amusement or for fraudulent purposes, "for it was not made without hands." (See *Trans. N. S., Inst. Sc.*, VIII, 1892, pp. 208-214). R. B. Brown, in the same publication, pp. xxxvi, records further particulars about the stone, but adds nothing of value as to an interpretation.

Strange to say a second, and very similarly inscribed stone was found sometime between 1895 and the early part of 1896, (McLeod would lead us to infer about 1898), at Bay View Park, directly opposite to the town of Yarmouth. While the grounds at that resort were being put into order in 1912, it was thoughtlessly placed in a stone-wall by the workmen. The proprietor, Mr. Drew, will however be glad to have it taken out at anytime for examination.

From half-tone cuts of the two stones, furnished me by J. M. Lawson of "The Yarmouth Herald," I find that the "inscriptions" on the two stones agree in about a dozen characters as to sequence and form, but the Bay View specimen has three additional characters below or above, according to the attitude of the stone.

The authority to whom Mr. Nickerson had referred the "inscription," suggests that perhaps it is a natural formation; an explanation, I believe, that has hitherto never been suggested. This leads one to make conjectures. The Fletcher

Stone is of quartzite, broken off a larger boulder on the plane surface of a very thin vein of quartz, and it had been noted that the supposed inscribing instrument had "barely penetrated the layer of quartz" (Dr. G. J. Farish, quoted by Wilson, 1890). The Bay View specimen has a similar flat surface where the characters are, but whether in quartzose material or not I do not know. We are therefore tempted to hazard the suggestion, although we have not seen the stones, that the so-called inscriptions possibly may be merely casts left by the weathering-out of prismatic crystals of tourmaline or some such mineral, which is frequently found penetrating quartz veins where there have been granitic intrusions. The stone should most certainly be examined by a geologist or mineralogist to ascertain if this is the case. If the marks were formed by tourmaline crystals, the casts of the characteristic striations should still be visible in the quartz, even though they had been cleaned out by a spike as has been reported.

One thing that is very much against this explanation, supposing both stones to be genuine, is that the first part of the "inscription" on the Bay View specimen (as shown in the engraving before me) is, as has been stated, like that on the Fletcher stone; which would be an almost impossible coincidence if they are natural forms. Had the two stones, on the other hand, been originally one, and the markings mineralogical in origin, then the one would be a reversed reproduction of the other, which is not the case according to the reproductions. Of course in making these remarks I am depending on the supposed accuracy of the half-tone cuts, as I have had no opportunity of examining the originals. It would seem a great pity that one at least of the stones is not in the Provincial Museum, where it could be preserved and easily accessible for examination.

It may be mentioned as of importance that T. B. Flint of Yarmouth, in a letter read before the Numismatic and Antiquarian Society of Philadelphia, on 5th February, 1880, states

that on an island near the mouth of the Tusket River there are also two very large stones with inscriptions in similar characters. "The spot," he states, "was very difficult of access by land, but not by water, although it is not in any frequented route." These are doubtless the large stones on the Chebogue River, to the east of Yarmouth referred to by R. B. Brown, (*Trans. N. S. Inst. Sc.*, vii, p. xxxvii).

Those who desire to investigate the literature on the subject, may consult the following articles:—

- 1865.. Wilson (Daniel, LL. D.). *Prehistoric Man*, Lond., 1865; p. 412. [Very brief reference to the "inscription," founded on a fac-simile received in 1857 from Dr. G. J. Farish].
- 1880.—Flint (T. B.). [Letter on the subject of the Fletcher Stone]. *Proc. Numismatic and Antiq. Soc. of Phil.*, for 5 Feb., 1880.
- 1884.—Phillips (Henry, Jr). On a Supposed Runic Inscription at Yarmouth, Nova Scotia. (Read 2 May, 1884). *Proc. Amer. Phil. Soc.*, Phila.; vol. XXI, pp. 491-2, with cut of inscription, p. 490.
- 1884.—Runic Inscription near Yarmouth, Nova Scotia. *Yarmouth Herald*, Yarmouth, 23 July, 1884. [Reprint of Phillips's article with cut, and a few additional items of information. Also reprints as a broadsheet].
- 1889.—Brown (George S.). *Yarmouth, N. S., a sequel to Campbell's History*. Bost., 1889; pp. 17-24. [Accepts and supports Phillips's theory].
- 1890.—Wilson (Sir Daniel). The Vinland of the Northmen. (Read 27 May, 1890). *Proc. Roy. Soc. Canada*; VIII (1890), sec. 2, pp. 116-120, with cut (sec. 2, pl. 1). [States that the inscription is not a Runic one, and gives many interesting particulars of the Fletcher stone].
- 1890.—[Article on the Fletcher stone]. *Herald*, New York, 27 July, 1890. [Gives a cut of the glyphs, which it claims were the work of Carian sailors in the Phoenician navy].
- 1892.—Webster (K. G. T.). The Fletcher Stone. (Read 11 Jan., 1892). *Trans. N. S. Inst. Sc.*, VIII, pp. 208-214. [A good general critical examination of claims made for the stone. Considers that it can only be the work of modern man].
- 1892.—Brown (R. B.). Letter in reference to the Fletcher Stone and other inscribed stones in Yarmouth Co., N. S. (Read 11 Jan., 1892). *Proc. N. S. Inst. Sc.*, VIII, pp. xxxvi-xxxviii. [Particulars of the stone since its discovery, etc.].
- 1903.—McLeod (Robert R.). *Markland or Nova Scotia*. [Chicago], 1903; pp. 154-155. [Speaks of the discovery of a second stone (the Bay View one) "only four years ago."]

One may also consult Hon. L. G. Power's "Vinland" (read 14 Jan., 1887), in the *Collections N. S. Hist. Soc.*, VII (1891), pp. 17-43, which treats of the old Norse voyageurs.

Halifax, N. S., 5th June, 1913.

(The above paper was written at my suggestion in order to place all the facts obtainable before our members.

W. J. Armitage, President.

## THE FENWICK FAMILY IN NOVA SCOTIA.

By COLONEL G. C. FENWICK, Indian Army (Retired.)

Memoranda relative to the connection of members of the Fenwick family with Nova Scotia.

Robert Fenwick only surviving son of John Fenwick, Captain Royal Navy, and Elizabeth Howard his wife, was born in London, England, on the 9th October, 1740. He was entered at the Royal Military Academy, Woolwich, on 1st April, 1757, became a fireworker (lowest grade of Commissioned rank in the Royal Regiment at that period) 8th June, 1757, and received his Commission as 2nd Lieutenant in the Royal Artillery, 27th February, 1761. The year following finds him at Halifax, N. S., from whence he was moved to Annapolis Royal, N. S., where he served from October, 1758, to August, 1766, again returning to Halifax, N. S., remaining there till May, 1767. The History of the Royal Artillery states Robert Fenwick took an active part in the siege batteries at Louisburg. The date of capture of this place being 27th July, 1758, and the force which, sent out from England under Major-General Amherst rendezvoused at Halifax, N. S., and left there 28th May, 1758, arrived before Louisburg 2nd June, 1758, and joined the fleet under Admiral Boscawen. This makes it probable Robert Fenwick accompanied the force from England returning after the siege to Halifax and from thence going to Annapolis. During the period of his stay at Annapolis Royal, according to family tradition he saw much service against the French in Canada being present amongst other affairs, at the Battle and taking of Quebec by General Wolfe, 13th September, 1759, and is said to have been close to the hero when he fell on the heights of Abraham.

While stationed at Annapolis Royal Robert Fenwick married on the 2nd January, 1764, Ann daughter of Major Erasmus James Phillips, 40th Foot, by his marriage with Ann daughter

of John Dyson. This Major E. J. Phillips is well known as the Lieut-Governor of the colony under his uncle Sir Richard Phillips who was a Lieutenant-General in the Army and is buried in Westminster Abbey.

Ann Phillips was born at Annapolis, date unknown. She had a brother John also born at Annapolis, 30th April, 1741, and became a Lieutenant in the 35th Foot, dying in New York in 1776. Their sister Elizabeth, born at Annapolis, date not known, married Horatio Gates, a godson of the great statesman Horace Walpole. This Horatio Gates threw in his lot with the rebel colonists and commanded the army which defeated General Burgoyne at the battle of Saratoga, 17th October, 1777, being himself in turn defeated by Lord Cornwallis at Camden in South Carolina, 16th August, 1780, the two-brothers-in-law Horatio Gates and Robert Fenwick were thus opponents in arms though correspondence shows intimate friends to the last.

Robert Fenwick who was promoted First Lieutenant 1st May, 1765, was next stationed at Woolwich from June, 1767, to June, 1772, and at Chatham July 1772 to May 1773, returning to Halifax, N. S., in June, 1773 remaining there till June, 1774, thence he proceeded to Castle William. On 1st January, 1771, he was promoted Captain-Lieutenant. He was at Boston Common, from August, 1774, to July, 1775, and at Boston till March 1776. This period covers that of the battle of Bunker's Hill, fought June 17th, 1775. We next find him again at Halifax, N. S., from April to July 1776, from whence he proceeded to Stratton Island in August, 1776, and from then on served in the American War of Independence till his death in New York on the 23rd May, 1779.

The following has been kindly furnished by Mr. Robert H. Kelby, the Librarian of the New York Historical Society from the Society's papers for 1870, page 299.

From the "New York Gazette and the Weekly Mercury Monday, 31st May, 1799."

“New York May 31st. Sunday the 23rd inst: departed “this life after a short illness, Robert Fenwick, Esq., Captain “in the Royal Regiment of Artillery and Bridge Master of the “Army in America.”

“The many excellent qualities which were united in this “gentleman secured him the general respect of all who enjoyed “the pleasure of his acquaintance. In his public life he stood “distinguished by the greatest attention and abilities: whilst “his private walk in life was adorned with every social and do- “mestic virtue. He lived universally esteemed and died most “sincerely lamented.”

“The remains attended by the Brigade of Artillery and by “the Officers of the Garrison were deposited in the vault in “Trinity Churchyard on Monday evening with every military “honor due to the memory of a character so truly respectable.”

Mrs. Ann Fenwick died at Woolwich, Kent, England, 11th October, 1785.

Of the union of Robert and Ann Fenwick were born Robert George, at Annapolis Royal, N.S., 2nd October, 1765, became a Lieutenant in the 16th Foot and died in Ireland in 1788. William at Halifax, N. S., 12th January, 1767, of whom more hereafter. Thomas Howard at Plumstead in England joined the Royal Artillery, served with distinction under H. R. H. the Duke of York in the war in Holland against the French Republicans in 1792-3-4. Appointed to the Royal Horse Artillery on the formation of that branch of the service in 1794. Died at Woolwich, England, in 1797.

Benjamin at Barbadoes, I. W., 23rd November, 1769, of whom more hereafter.

John Phillips, at Barbadoes W. I., December, 1771 joined the Royal Navy, served in H. M. S. Pandora sent in search of the mutineers of the “Bounty” and wrecked 28th August, 1791. Died after the long voyage in open boats from privation and exposure on reaching the Isle of Timur, 17th January, 1792.

William Fenwick the second son as above was a cadet at the R. M. A. Woolwich from 30th May, 1781. Commissioned 2nd Lieutenant in the Royal Artillery, 23rd August, 1787, transferred to the Royal Engineers, 12th July, 1788. From correspondence in family possession he was in Nova Scotia in 1792-3 looking after property apparently belonging originally to his mother which brought him into daily contact with the resident families the Winnietts, Walkers, etc., and on 26th December, 1794 he married at Annapolis, Ann, the daughter of Thomas Walker by the latter's marriage with Margaret daughter of John Dyson. As Ann Walker and Maria who married Thomas Williams were sisters, the future Sir Fenwick Williams of Kars became nephew to William Fenwick, to whom he owed much of his education and putting out in life. A paper we have, shows the schoolmaster at Woolwich of Fenwick Williams looked to received payment for the lad's teaching from Mrs. Ann Fenwick nee Walker.

William Fenwick rose to the rank of Colonel and was Commanding Royal Engineer at Portsmouth at his death in Paris, France, 6th February, 1817.

His daughter Augustus Julie Fenwick, born 2nd April, 1799, married 9th August, 1828, William Winniett, a member of the Nova Scotian family of that name, and Captain Royal Navy, Governor of Cape Coast Castle, Knighted for his defeat of King of Dahomey. He died at Ramsgate Kent in 1865.

Benjamin Fenwick, the fourth son as above, joined the R. M. A. Woolwich 16th October, 1793. Commissioned 2nd Lieutenant Royal Artillery in June 1794. Was present at the taking of the Cape of Good Hope in 1795 and married there on the 14th September, 1800, Maria Carolina daughter of the Rev. Petrus van der Spuy. After serving in many stations he was sent to Halifax, N. S., in October, 1804, and died there on 15th June, 1813, having been promoted Major in the Royal Regiment of Artillery.

From the above marriage were born Robert George at Cape of Good Hope 11th August, 1801, entered the Royal Engineers attained the rank of Captain in the Corps and died at Bermuda in 1843.

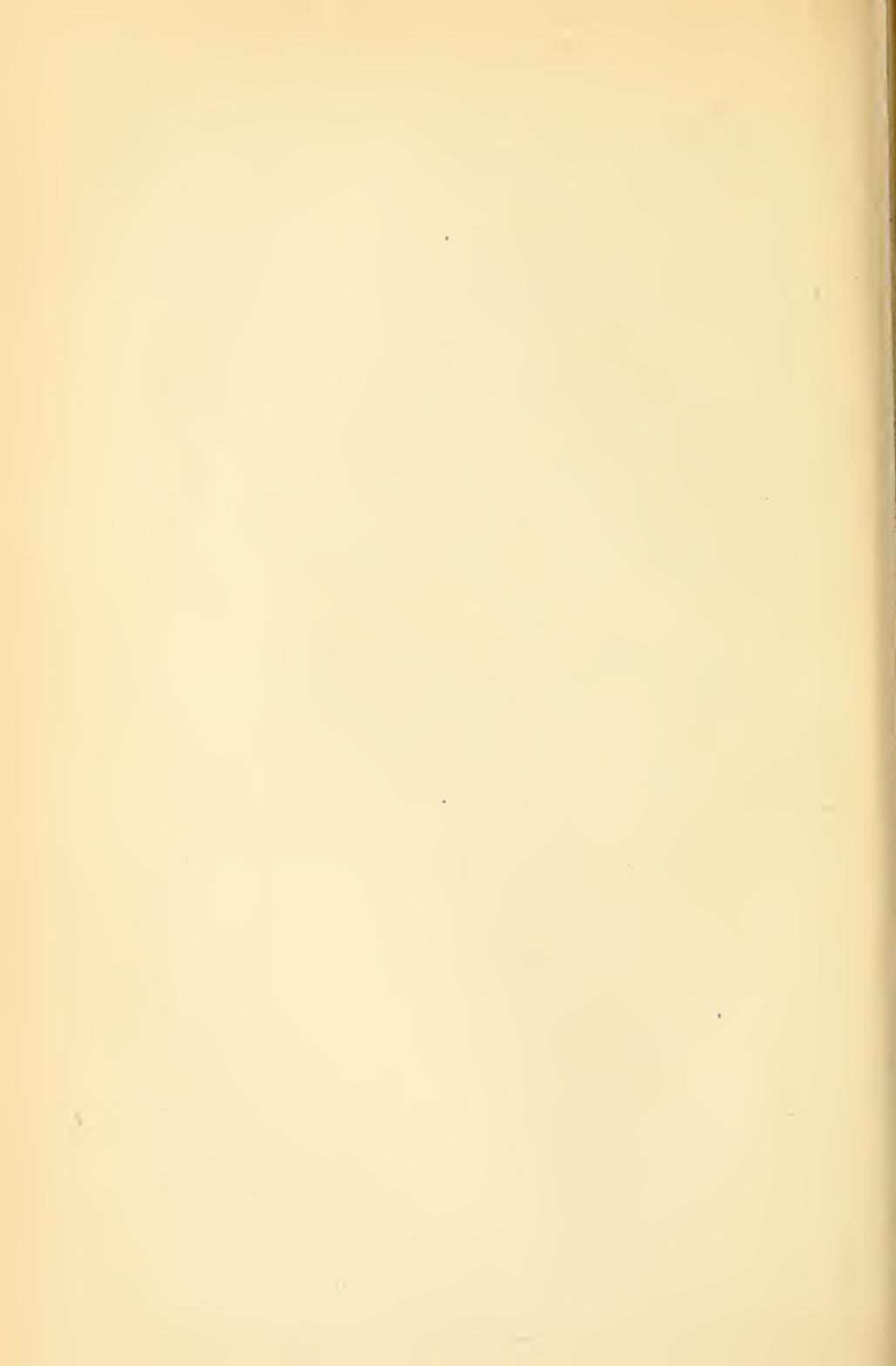
Horatio Gates, at Halifax, N.S., 9th October, 1805, named after the American General, entered the 86th County Down Regt. attained the rank of Major and died in 1865.

Charles Hare, at Halifax, N. S., 18th January, 1807, died young. James Henry Phillott, at Halifax, N. S., 29th March, 1808, entered the 13th P. A. L. I., 25th October, 1827 served with distinction with that Corps throughout the Affghan War, 1839-42; received Brevet Majority for the defence of Jellalabad; died at Belfast in 1849. Charlotte Arhilda, at Halifax, 26th November, 1809, died in 1891. George Howard, at Halifax, 6th June, 1811, died in 1885. Elizabeth, at Halifax, 1st November, 1812, died in 1843.

The compiler of the above is the second and only surviving son of Major James Henry Phillot Fenwick by his marriage with Louisa Susanna Bridge Sheridan, daughter of Mark Sheridan, Esq., 13 P. A. L. I. (now Somersetshire, L. I.)

G. C. Fenwick, Colonel,

Indian Army, (Retired).





**H. R. H. EDWARD, THE DUKE OF KENT,**  
**Commanding this District.**  
(From an Engraving by Thompson, 1820.)



## THE MILITIA OF NOVA SCOTIA, 1749-1867.

By JOSEPH PLIMSOLL EDWARDS, Londonderry, N. S.

(Read Jan. 1908 and Nov. 1911.)

The organization of measures of defence, however primitive they may be, is one of the first symptoms of national life in the history of any civilized community in which freedom is valued, and expansion hoped for. Without the power to maintain such freedom, its members, crushed and oppressed in body and spirit, sink into the condition of serfs, their vigour and manliness lost, their aims and aspirations contracted to the narrowest sphere, and their hopes for national or even local development dreams which in all probability can never be realized. In the words of a modern writer "The obligation of national defence is the "first obligation of a nation, for it is necessary to the existence "of a nation. Without the fulfilment of this obligation, a "State cannot exist even in the most imperfect form. A "State which uses no means of defending itself would soon be "blotted out of the map by the pressure of surrounding States."

Another writer says "No state is under obligation to commit "suicide or to suffer itself to be overrun by invasion and con- "quest, and trampled out of existence by unscrupulous and law- "less force, so long as it can resist and repel this violence." "Another, "Let us ever remember that a nation can never keep "its freedom, unless ready to maintain it at any time, and that "for its own security it must make use of those means which "Providence has placed at its disposal." These statements are hard facts, and could be endlessly amplified; they are applicable to all countries, regardless of age, of strength and of prestige. If pertinent to the well-being of the settled and more-or-less wealthy States of this century, how much more closely do they come home to the infant colony of Nova Scotia

as it struggled into life nearly two centuries ago. Let us glance briefly at our province as it was before Halifax came into being.

On the 2nd of October, 1710—a red letter day in Nova Scotian records—a picturesque and history-making scene was enacted in and about the old French fort at Port Royal, when Governor de Subercase and his garrison marched out with drums beating and colours flying, and Colonel Francis Nicholson took possession in the name of Her Britannic Majesty Queen Anne. No retrocession followed as in the case of Louisbourg a few years later; and in spite of almost constant attack and trouble during the next forty years, in spite of gross neglect and mis-government, the foothold was maintained, and Acadia became nominally a British province. In 1748 the district could be roughly described as comprising all the mainland of Nova Scotia, and all of what is now New Brunswick but with boundaries vague and undefined. In this vast region there were but two feeble English settlements—one at Annapolis Royal—one at Canso; and a few scattered French hamlets in the western part of the peninsula. Indians and French half-breeds—“*couriers de bois*” roamed through the woods intent on massacre and plunder; and any English speaking person who ventured out of the narrow limits of the settlements carried his life in his hands.

With the incoming colonists thus in constant danger of violent death or cruel captivity—it is not to be wondered at that when the new era of government recognition began in the establishment of the town of Halifax, one of the first steps was the organization of the settlers into a militia. During the earlier period (1710-48) such a force seems to have been nominally formed at Canso, as the provincial records show the appointment of a certain John Henshaw and John Richards to be captains of companies of militia there. Nothing is known of the organization of these companies, and one can only conjecture that they were formed among the traders and fishermen of Canso and vicinity for the purpose of defending that settle-

ment and their homes from the occasional forays of French and Indian raiders. Governor Cornwallis landed on 21st June, 1749; and it may be of interest to note how comprehensive—almost despotic in fact—were his instructions from the British government as to the formation of a militia for the new province. Clause 24 of the King's Commission to him reads

“And we do hereby give and grant unto you the said Edward Cornwallis, by yourself or by your Captains and Commanders by yourself to be authorized, full power and authority to levy, arm, muster, command and employ all persons whatsoever residing within our said Province, and as occasion shall serve to march from one place to another, or to embark them for the resisting and withstanding of all enemies, pirates and rebels, both at land and sea, and to transport such forces to any of our Plantations in America, if necessity shall require for the defence of the same against the invasion or attempt of any of our enemies, and such enemies, pirates and rebels, if there shall be occasion to pursue and prosecute in or out of the limits of our said Province and Plantation, or any of them, and if it shall so please God, to vanquish and apprehend and take them, and being taken according to law, to put to death or keep and preserve them alive at your discretion, and to execute martial law at time of invasion, or other times when by law it may be executed, and to do and execute all and every other thing, or things, which our Captain General and Governor-in-Chief doth or ought to belong.”

As soon as the plan of the town had been completed, and the building lots marked out and assigned to the settlers, the paramount question of defence came up, and fortifications (necessarily of a more or less rough and tentative nature) were begun. The garrison of regular troops was woefully small, consisting only of one company each of Hopson's (the 29th) regiment, and Warburton's (the 45th); this little force was supplemented by a body of about 60 Indian Rangers under command of Capt. Goreham, recruited in the New England colonies. The Indians who infested the outskirts of the

settlement began to get bolder as winter approached, pleased no doubt at the thought of the many scalps and prisoners which might become their prey, and relying on the inexperience of the settlers, the small military force, and the impunity with which they had been allowed to lay waste the country during the preceding 35 or 40 years. Several parties were waylaid, stragglers were cut off, and the horrors of a border war were beginning to be in evidence.

An immediate increase in the military strength of the colony, both for defence and offence, was essential, and little time was lost in getting such an organization into shape for action. Defensive works were increased and strengthened, two independent companies of Rangers—accustomed to the woods and to Indian warfare—were raised, and the organization of a militia force in a somewhat rough form was decided on by the Council.

On Sunday, the 10th of December, 1749, after divine service, all the male settlers between 16 and 60 years of age were assembled on the Parade (then a rough and unlevelled field,) and the Militia of Nova Scotia thus practically came into existence. There was little or no pomp or ceremony; it was mainly in the nature of a muster of the men of the settlement, to see who were available for duty, and what conditions existed as to arms, accoutrements and clothing. The following officers were gazetted in the sole official record of that day—the Order Book of the Governor and Council.

**Captains:**—John Galland, Wm. Foy, Alex. Callendar, John Kent, Gregory Berners (or Ewers), John Heete, Robt. Campbell, Wm.. Brown, John Collier, John Creighton, David Haldane.

**Lieutenants:**—Henry Windale, Wm. Shaw, Thos. Hancock Thos. Jenkins, Thos. Lewis, Robt. Reeves, Thos. Harison, Henry Scomberg,—Deschamps. Thos. Saul, Henry Wilkins, —Collingwood,—Hoar.

**2nd Lieutenants:**—Messrs. Purdy, Willis, Ford, Scrudger, Catherwood, Reynolds, Hadley, Gerrish, and Kerr.

A similar gathering of the newly-born force was held on the following Sunday, and the men ordered to fell the trees around the town outside the forts and barricades. The active hostility of the Indians showed no diminution; keen alarm was still felt by all classes, and every effort was made to prepare for emergencies. On the 7th January, several citizens petitioned the Governor and Council to declare martial law; but the authorities wisely thought that the situation was not serious enough for such a drastic measure. Stringent regulations were, however, enacted governing the drill, discipline and duties of the militia; the men were formed into 10 companies of 70 men each (two companies for each Division) with a captain and two subalterns to each; the Artificers were assembled in a separate and distinct company. The whole force amounted nominally to about 840 men. The mainguard of 50 men was mounted every evening near the Parade to do duty until sunrise, with other guards of 20 men from each Division; work on the fortifications and block houses was pushed forward to as great an extent as possible. A penalty of 24 hours imprisonment and a fine of 5 shillings was levied for neglect or refusal to do duty. Every company was ordered to exercise for one hour on Sunday mornings before divine service. Discipline was apparently well maintained, and Sergeant Tate received 20 lashes for violence and insult to his commanding officer, Capt. Calendar. The Governor reported favorably of the behaviour of the officers, but could not commend that of the rank and file.

It may here be noted that according to so eminent an authority as the late Dr. T. B. Akins, the Grand Parade was not originally intended as a drill ground for the King's troops, nor had it ever been claimed by the military authorities, but was intended from the first as a place of muster for the militia, although the garrison used it also for guard-mounting. It would seem probable, however, that it was originally intended for any and all military purposes.

In November and December of this year (1750) the following officers were appointed to the Dartmouth militia; the town across the harbour was then a tiny settlement hemmed in by forest, and at the mercy of the Indians' scalping knife:

Robert Campbell,	} to be Lieutenants.
Jos. Scott,	
Thos. Burke,	
Thos. Leake,	
Josiah Rogerson.	

I mention these and the preceding names as holding the first commissions issued to the militia of the Province.

In June 1751, Albertus S. Strasburgher and John Young were gazetted captains in the militia of the suburbs of Halifax; John Steiford and F. L. Bourgeois, Lieutenants; and Lewis Taquit and George Winslow, Second Lieutenants.

We hear but little of the militia during the next year or two, but undoubtedly it did a fair amount of duty. Indians still infested the outskirts of the town, several settlers were killed, and many taken prisoners; the garrison,—Regulars, Rangers and Militia—was kept on the alert. On the 22nd of March, 1753, the latter force was reorganized by the following order. I will give it in full, as it is important:

### PROCLAMATION.

#### for the forming of a Militia.

*By His Excellency Peregrine Thomas Hopson, Esq., Captain General and Governor in Chief and Vice Admiral of His Majesty's Province of Nova Scotia, or Acadia, and Colonel of one of His Majesty's Regiments of Foot.*

*In Council.*

*Whereas, I am directed by His Majesty's Royal Instructions to cause a Militia to be established, as well for the Defence of the Lives and Properties of His Majesty's Subjects as the Honour and Security of this his Province.*

I have thought fit, by and with the Advice and Consent of His Majesty's Council, to issue this Proclamation hereby strictly requiring and enjoining All Planters, Inhabitants and their Servants between the ages of sixteen and sixty residing in and belonging to this Town, Suburbs or the Peninsula of Halifax, the Town and Suburbs of Dartmouth and the parts adjacent excepting the Foreign Settlers, as it is intended that they shall be formed at their Out Settlement. That the said Planters and Inhabitants do forthwith provide themselves and Servants with proper and sufficient Fire Arms consisting of a Musket, Gun or Fuzil, not less than three foot long in the barrel, two spare flints, and twelve charges of powder and ball, suitable to their respective Fire Arms, which said Arms and Ammunition the said Planters, Inhabitants and their Servants are to have and appear with at such Rendezvous as shall be by Proclamation Appointed at any time on or after the 22nd day of May next, in the year of Our Lord 1753, at which time the said Planters and Inhabitants to be accountable for themselves and servants. And in default of such appearance and provision aforesaid, they will be liable to the penalty of forty shillings to be levied on the goods and chattels of such Offender, or Offenders, by Warrant of Distress and Sale, under the Hand and Seal of any one or more of His Majesty's Justices of the Peace for the Town and County of Halifax, and for want of sufficient Distress such offender or offenders to suffer One Month's Imprisonment and hard labour. Such Warrant to be granted upon information of such Officer, or Officers, as shall be appointed to muster the persons required to appear as aforesaid.

*Done in the Council Chamber at Halifax, this 22nd day of March in the year of Our Lord 1753, and in the 26th year of His Majesty's Reign.*

(Signed). P. T. HOPSON.

*By His Excellency's Command by  
and with the Advice and Con-  
sent of His Majesty's Council.*

(Signed). WM. COTTERELL, Secy.

**GOD SAVE THE KING.**

Resolved that an Act be forthwith prepared for the Regulation of the said Militia.

P. T. HOPSON.

JNO. DUPORT, *Sec. Conc.*

A proclamation soon followed by which the militia were assembled on the 6th of June, with arms and ammunition; those of the South suburbs within the pickets opposite the end of Barrington street, near Horseman's Fort; those of the North suburbs between the Grenadiers' Fort and Luttrell's Fort; and those of the town proper on the Esplanade and Citadel Hill. At the later period this year, guards from the militia were mounted every night. A battalion had been formed at Lunenburg, under command of Lieut-Col. Patrick Sutherland; and in December of this year, a serious riot took place there which might have resulted in much bloodshed had it not been for the firmness and prompt action of that officer. Leonard C. Rudolf was major of this battalion. The Lunenburg militia did a large amount of hard and useful work during the next year, and we have detailed accounts of perilous expeditions undertaken by them in 1756 and 1758.

War between Great Britain and France had been brewing for some time: in fact, although nominally at peace, covert acts of actual warfare had been going on for years; and in 1756 the undercurrent of border skirmish and irritating aggression blossomed into a definite and recognized condition of hostilities. Halifax became one of the official naval and military stations of the Empire, and stately ships-of-war and scarlet-clad regiments soon took post at the infant capital. In 1757 no less than 12,000 soldiers arrived, and a large fleet soon followed. The civilian element was small and its numbers remained stationary for years; had it not been for the enormous sums expended on the colony by the King's government, and the large outlay for and by the soldiers and sailors of the various expeditions, Halifax must have long remained an obscure village, dependent largely on the fisheries, and with many years to wait before it could

attain financial strength, and a reputation as a recognised and important commercial mart. These men of the profession of arms were, however, birds of passage in a sense; and as the gigantic and ultimately successful efforts of the British government to expel France from North America developed, Halifax was occasionally left with a very small garrison of regular troops. At all times during this stormy period, the militia was in a fair measure of readiness for emergencies, and at times had severe and unpleasant duty to perform in the exigencies of border warfare. At the first General Assembly of the people's representatives—begun 2nd October, 1758—one of the earliest Acts passed identified the force more closely with the national life of the province than was possible under the former proclamation, and stamped on it the seal of public approval. It was entitled "An Act for Establishing and Regulating a Militia," and is a most interesting relic of early legislation in Nova Scotia. It is perhaps unnecessary to give you this and subsequent Acts in full; but they are well worth examination by those interested in our early measures of defence. This Act may be summarized as follows:—

Clause 1. Provides that from and after 1st of December, 1758, all males between 16 and 60 years shall bear arms and attend all musters, etc.

2. Each company shall have certain defined precincts, and the clerk of each company shall make a quarterly roll of all eligible within said precincts and present the roll to the Captain of the company. Failure to do this was punishable by a fine of 40 shillings.

3. Duty shall be continuous until discharged. Any evasion meant a fine of 10 shillings.

4. Each person must provide a musket, gun, or fuzil, (not less than 3 feet long in barrel) 2 spare flints, and 12 charges of powder and ball. Fine for non-compliance, 40 shillings, or one month at hard labour. Musters to be held once every

six months or as often as ordered. Drill once every three months. Fine of 5 shillings for non-attendance and of £5 to each Captain who fails to order parades as above.

5. Enforces discipline on parade. Penalty 5 shillings or 48 hours jail.

6. Guards (or "watches" as they are called) to be ordered from time to time. Penalty for non-attendance 10 shillings.

Other clauses fix the exemptions, appointments of N. C. O's, further fines, how alarms will be given, etc. All fines collected were to be expended for drums, halberts, colours and other regimental necessaries. The Act ends with the following:—

"And it is hereby humbly requested of his Excellency the Captain General, by the Assembly, and it is enacted, that whilst there is a sufficient number of regular troops within the Town of Halifax, for the defence, the Militia of the Town shall be spared from watching and warding without the Picketed Lines of the Town."

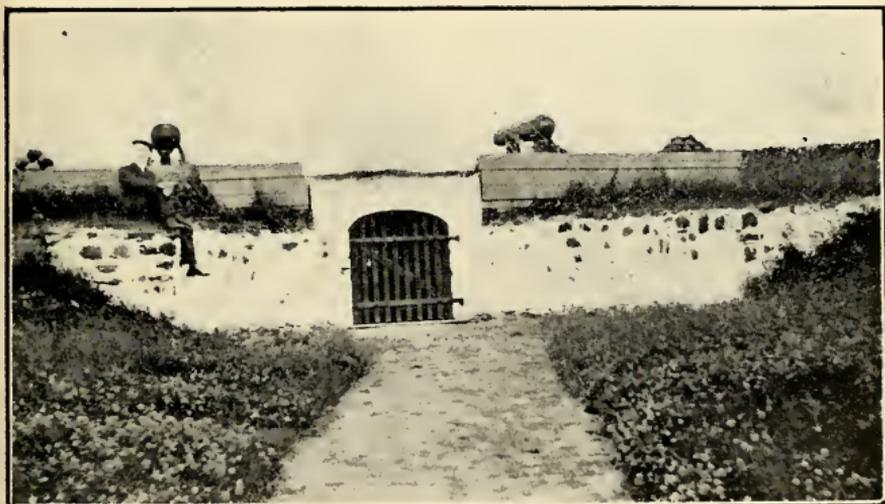
At the session of the House begun on 1st July, 1761, an additional Act was put through. Its chief object was (1) to make imperative the service of non-commissioned officers, as such, when duly appointed, and imposing a fine of 40 shillings for refusal to act. (2) Any N. C. O. drunk or disorderly when on duty shall pay 10 shillings or be committed for 48 hours at hard labour.

This Act also amended the former one in increasing the period for annual drill and exercise to eight days instead of four.

Another Act passed at same session deals with the militia when on actual service in the time of war. Any insolence or neglect of duty is punishable with a fine of 40 shillings, or in default of payment with riding the wooden horse for not less than half an hour, or 10 days labour. Courts Martial are pro-



Gateway in Old Fort at Annapolis Royal.



Old Fort Annapolis Royal.



vided for; drafting men by ballot for active service (penalty for refusal to act 10 shillings) and providing for the pay of all ranks when on active service outside their own country. Officers received same pay as King's officers; sergeants, 2/—, corporals and drummers 1/4, and privates 1/— per day.

In 1762 the French invaded Newfoundland and captured St. John's; and in consequence wide-spread alarm disturbed the peace of the rulers and good citizens of Halifax. Councils of war were called, and defensive measures were promptly taken, among these being the daily exercise of the Halifax militia, and the ordering of 200 men to Halifax from Lunenburg. This last was subsequently countermanded, in view of the insolence of the Indians in that quarter. One hundred of the militia of King's county were ordered to escort to Halifax all the French neutrals who were then working for some of the inhabitants of Kings and Annapolis counties. A service company of militia under Joseph Gerrish, the naval store-keeper, was also formed. Other like measures were adopted, but the French came not; the alarm subsided, and matters gradually receded to a normal footing.

In 1763, St. John's Island (now Prince Edward) and Cape Breton were annexed to Nova Scotia, and the militia system of the latter was, nominally at any rate, extended to these two islands. Our province was for the next few years territorially at her highest point, embracing the whole area of the Maritime Provinces as now known,—a Dominion in itself. Settlers came in rapidly, and the country thrived; but the dark clouds of the rebellion in the New England colonies began to be visible to far-seeing men, and serious trouble soon became imminent.

During this period the militia came into no prominence, but did their duty as required. Owing to the fact that a proportion of the recent immigrants were from New England, Nova Scotia was, in a sense, tainted here and there with disloyalty. Halifax and the older settlements were true to their salt; but

Cobequid, the Annapolis Valley, and Cumberland were deeply touched with disaffection. Agents of the rebellious colonies were numerous, spying out the land and looking for good ground wherein to plant the seed of their doctrines. The authorities took in sail promptly and prepared for every possible storm. Among other measures 400 militia were ordered from Lunenburg to Halifax, as well as 100 Acadians from Clare and Yarmouth, and two companies from Kings county. Owing to Governor Legge's anxiety (carried at times to an extreme degree) the officers of the Halifax regiment of militia were called on to take the oath of allegiance before going on duty.

The rebellion in the neighbouring colonies broke out in full force in 1775; and from then until the end of the war in 1782 the militia of the province had a busy and anxious time. The King's troops at first were all sent to the seat of hostilities, and during the first year the town guards and other details were drawn from the several militia detachments which were embodied in Halifax or sent in from the country districts. Ammunition was sent to various central points for defensive purposes, and good use was made of it in several instances before peace was declared. A suspicion of the loyalty of some of the militia—especially that of the Bay of Fundy shore—was naturally felt, but nothing occurred to justify such thoughts. Light infantry companies were directed to be formed as follows:

At	Halifax	100 men
	Lunenburg	200 men
	Queens	100 men
	Clare	50 "
	Annapolis	50 "
	Cornwallis	50 "
	Horton	50 "
	Windsor, Newport and Falmouth	50 men.
	Cumberland	100 men
	Cape Breton	100 "
	Isle Madame	100 "

Truro, Onslow and Londonderry, 60 men. A total of 1010.

Of these 300 were French Acadians.

Hon. Mr. Gould, Colonel of the Lunenburg militia, took command.

In 1775 another militia Act was passed by the House of Assembly. This was an addition to those formerly enacted, and which I have described. It relates chiefly to militiamen volunteering for active service, and gives authority to the Governor and others to enlist such Volunteers. It also covers drafting of men by ballot for active service, penalties for non-compliance, pay, deductions for clothing and other details. It enacts that the embodied militia must serve for such time as thought necessary by the powers-that-be, and also has a clause to the effect that every officer in such corps, except the Adjutant, must be a resident and freeholder of this province.

This Act was repealed in 1776, owing to the arrival of a large force of the King's troops.

We have a very meagre record of the doings of the force during this period, beyond that a fair number of men were embodied, and that detachments were moved from one place to another as the exigences of the service required.

Early in 1780 a small party of the Lunenburg militia captured an American brig with a valuable cargo; and in a somewhat similar manner Lieut. Wheaton and six men of the Parshoro regiment attacked and captured a party of rebels who had raided that shore and taken possession of a house on Partridge Island.

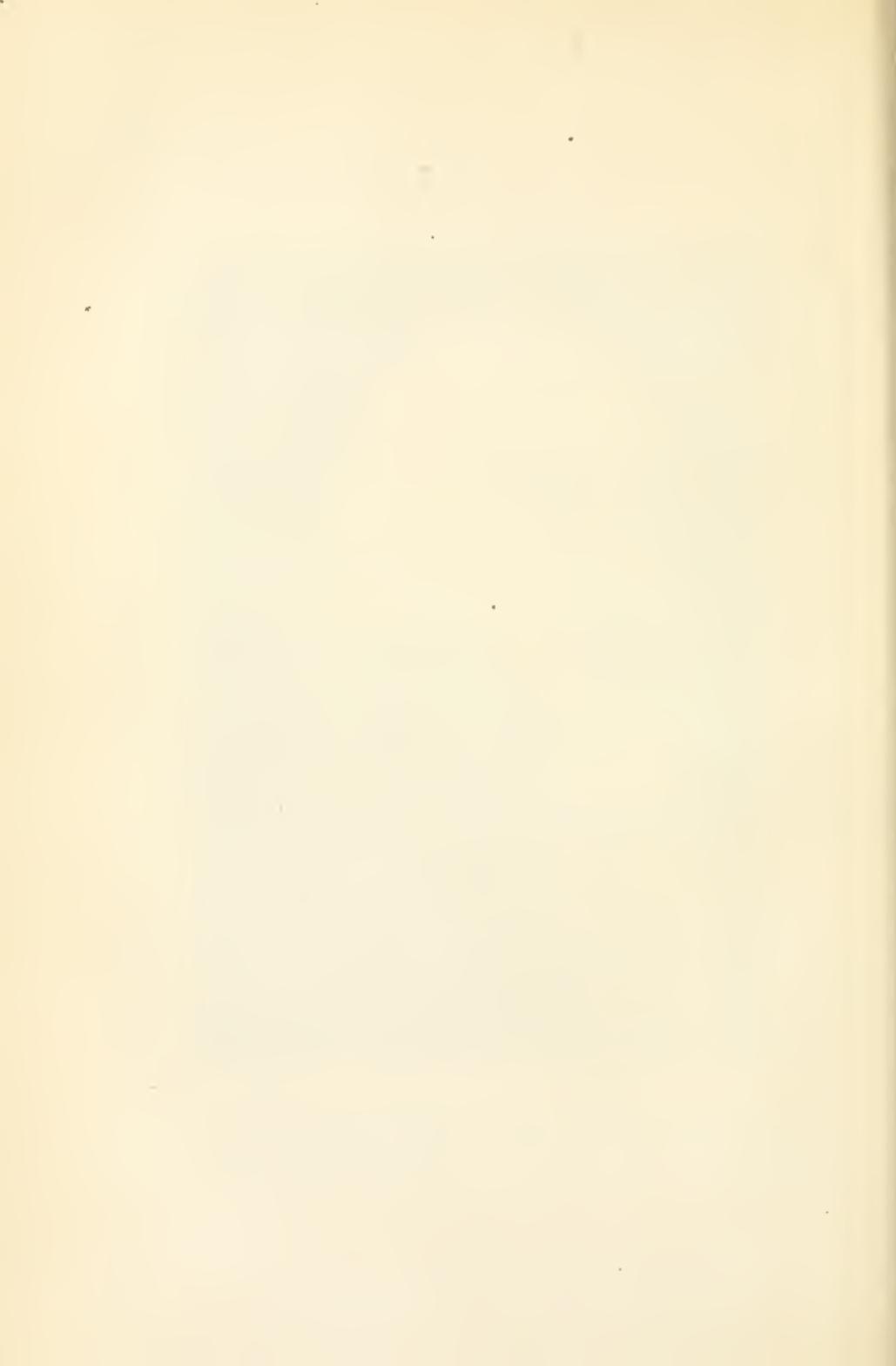
In May of this year, the French (who had joined forces with the revolted Americans in their warfare against Great Britain) prepared a large armament at Brest; and the loyal colonies were warned to be on their guard. The commanding

officer at Halifax was not idle. Work was pushed forward on the fortifications, large parties of militia being employed in the erection of bomb batteries. No attack took place, however, and events soon resumed their normal condition. Next year the Governor reported the force as being in tolerable condition and that Halifax county men could, at all events, be depended upon. This was rather faint praise, but he had not yet visited the other counties and therefore knew but little of them; Imperial officers of that day were not apt to bestow too much praise on rural warriors. The latter proved themselves on more than one occasion to be of good stuff; a very spirited little action took place near Cape Split in May of this year, between a party of Kings county militia and about thirty rebels, which resulted in the capture of the latter with their vessel and boats.

The war ceased in 1782, and little of interest in militia matters took place until 1793, when hostilities with France again broke out; preparations for the defence of Nova Scotia were actively undertaken, and the militia were much in evidence. The Lieut-Governor reported "In the town (Halifax) I have "seven hundred good Militia who may be depended upon. "One Company, about sixty freeholders, are formed into Artillery, and are now practising with great assiduity. I have "another select regiment of one thousand men, commanded by "half-pay officers, and composed of privates, most of whom "served under these officers during the late war. They have "two Companies of Artillery and one of Horse, and can be "assembled in Halifax in six days' notice, part of them sooner. This evidently refers to a corps of the Loyalists (known as the Nova Scotia Legion), many thousands of whom had settled in the province, and who furnished the finest possible material for a sturdy, well-disciplined and experienced militia. Three regiments were enrolled in the western part of the province, respectively commanded by Colonels Barclay, Mil- lidge and Taylor; in the latter battalion were many Acadians,—once expelled—now welcomed. The Halifax force appears to have been in a very effective state, and on a test alarm being



**STEPHEN HALL BINNEY,**  
Barrack Master at Halifax, Died 1836, aged 75 years.  
After a portrait in the Provincial Museum, painted by his  
brother, Hibbert Newton Binney, in 1791.



given, the 1st battalion, commanded by Col. Pyke, paraded in fifteen minutes, completely armed. This corps also furnished 550 men to assist the garrison in repairing and mounting the batteries. The Halifax Artillery under Captain Tremain, were also evidently a crack corps, and were reported to have in their ranks: "Men of from £100 to £600 per annum clear estate, "who, from a declared principle of loyalty, and utter abhorrence "of French Democratic tyranny, have voluntarily offered their "services."

The force this year was estimated as nine thousand strong, of whom seven thousand would be available in an emergency. The excitement increased as the season went on; in October, 1050 men, exclusive of officers, from the militia of Hants, Kings and Annapolis marched into Halifax; one company under Capt. Willets from Granville did 135 miles in thirty-five hours. Reports of their behavior and appearance were most favorable. After four weeks duty, they were dismissed and sent home.

In 1794 and 1795 the militia were again employed in repairs to the Halifax fortifications. At this period the force consisted of two regiments of Foot and an Artillery company in Halifax, one regiment each in Annapolis, Digby, Hants, Kings and Colchester; also two companies of Acadians in Annapolis, and the Nova Scotia Legion.

In this year (1795) was passed an Act amending and consolidating the several militia Acts hitherto in force. It was very complete, containing 37 clauses, and covered all points and contingencies then deemed possible in connection with militia service. A minimum of six drills a year was ordered. In 1796 an additional Act went through the House, and the number of drills was reduced from six to four; and in 1797, another clause was added, referring to men employed in the Ordnance, Royal Engineer Department, Dockyard and other Imperial works.

400 to 600 militia were embodied in Halifax this year for garrison duty, and 2000 more were under orders to march in on the shortest notice. All were discharged from duty in October. The nominal returns of the force this year showed a strength of 7297 officers and men. A year later it had crept up to 8147, including three companies of Artillery, stationed respectively at Halifax, Shelburne and Yarmouth.

In June 1797, a force of 32 officers, 24 sergeants, 3 drummers and 573 rank and file were embodied in the rural districts, and marched to Halifax, where it remained on duty until the end of October.

In 1800 the militia was estimated by the Governor to consist of 10,000 effectives, and that 6,000 more would be available in case of invasion. As a matter of fact, the actual strength did not exceed 7200, as shown by the official returns. This year further legislation was enacted; it related chiefly to troops on the march, billeting, meals, etc., and fixed the price of dinner at nine pence, breakfast and supper at six pence each.

In 1803, night patrols of the 1st Halifax militia were ordered out.—incendiary fires being common, and the watch of that day probably useless in such an emergency. In 1804, a false alarm of invasion was sounded to test the readiness for service of the militia of the town; before 10 a. m., about one thousand men were embodied and at their posts; two hundred of these were Artillery. The gunners, and four companies of Foot were uniformed, the remainder being in plain clothes.

Another Act was passed this year dealing with the number of Artillerymen to each company, service in the Grenadier and Light companies, and other minor matters. There was also published a summary of the exact position of the militia laws, showing clearly what were then in effect.

The force this year showed a decided gain in numbers, about 10,500 men of all ranks being returned on the official list.

BY HIS EXCELLENCY

Sir George Prevost, Bart.

Lieutenant Governor and Commander in Chief, in and over His Majesty's Province of Nova-Scotia, and its Dependencies, &c. &c. &c.

To *Lieut. to Gen. W.* Greeting.

BY Virtue of the Power and Authority to me given and granted by His Majesty, I do hereby (during Pleasure) constitute and appoint you to be *Captain of the 15th Battalion of Militia, Major William Lockhart, Major Lieutenant Colonel*

You are therefore duly to exercise as well the Inferior Officers as Private Men of that  *Battalion* in Arms; and to use your utmost endeavours to keep them in good Order and Discipline, and I do hereby command them to obey you as their  *Captain* and you are to observe and follow such Orders and Instructions as you shall from time to time receive from myself  *Lieutenant General* or any other your Superior Officer according to the Laws and Regulations already made or that shall hereafter be made for the Militia of this Province.

GIVEN under my Hand and Seal at Arms, at Halifax, this  *22nd*  Day of  *Decr*  18 *11*  in the  *1st*  Year of His Majesty's Reign.

By HIS EXCELLENCY'S Command,

*W. Cogswell*  
 *Lieut. Genl*

Entered in the ADJUTANT  
GENERAL'S Office.

COMMISSION OF CAPTAIN LEWIS EDWARD PIERS,  
(1785-1867).



An attempt seems to have been made to divide the force into brigades, as the Halifax troops (1019 men) were officially designated as the 1st Brigade; but no further steps in this direction were apparently taken. The Artillery branch of the service had evidently been making rapid progress, as twenty-seven officers and four hundred and eighty-five men were reported as enrolled; one company near Halifax was composed chiefly of fishermen.

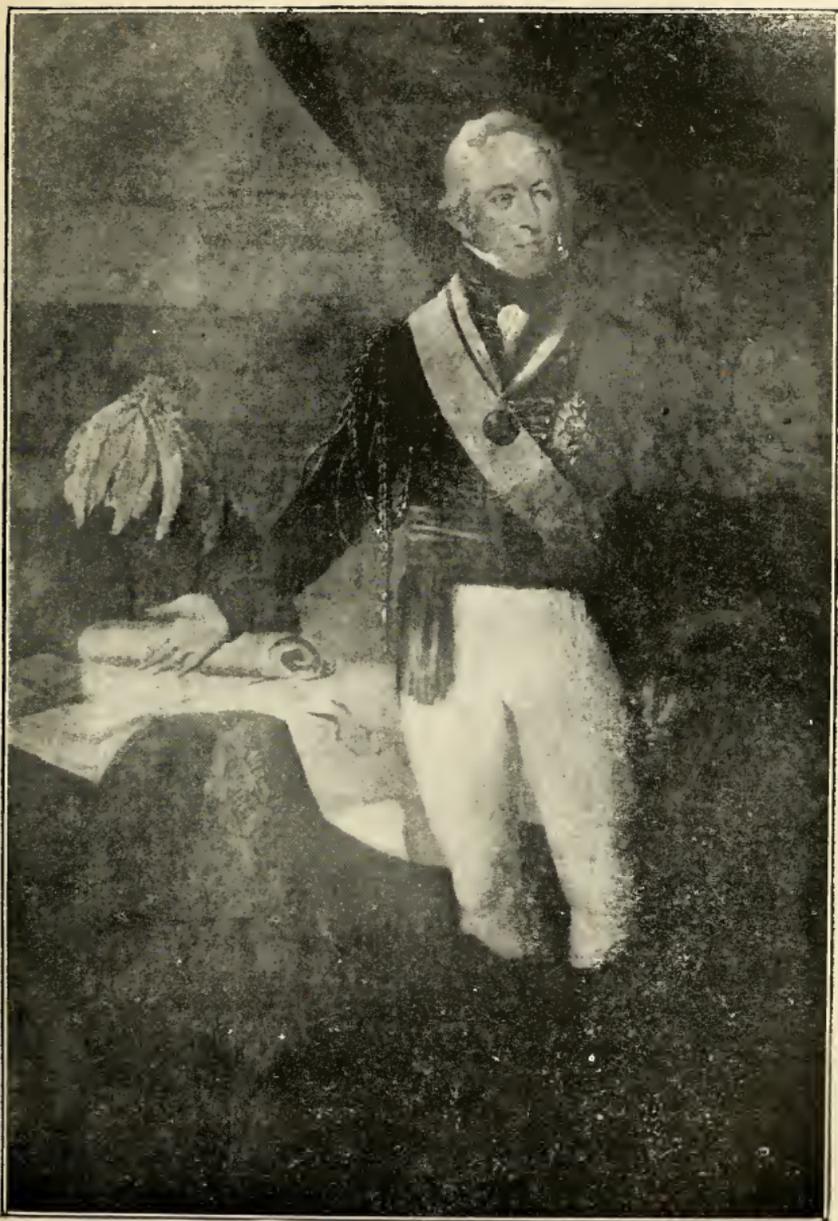
In 1805, Chester came into prominence as furnishing a large force of militia; but more than two hundred of the number were reported to be unarmed, and that state of things existed to a large degree throughout the whole province. The Governor, Sir John Wentworth, gave much attention to the militia, and was constantly worrying the commanding officers of the regular regiments in garrison for muskets for the rural force. These arms, however, appear to have been scarce, as two years later (in 1807) he again reports that in case of an invasion half the militia would be useless. He estimates that this year a force of 40,000 men could be raised if required. In August, on the departure of H. M. 98th and the Newfoundland regiments to Quebec, 1,000 militia were embodied and placed in garrison; and in October 500 more were drafted in from the country battalions.

Troubles with the United States were again becoming frequent and the military establishment of Nova Scotia increased in importance. In 1808, three regiments of militia were embodied and put on an active service footing; in Halifax alone 1800 men were trained and ready for duty. Two hundred were also stationed at Annapolis for three months. Sir George Prevost assumed the reins of government this year, and took a rather pessimistic view of the value and number of the militia force of the province; he succeeded however in inducing the Assembly to guarantee to pay for 2,000 stand of new arms, which he thereupon issued. A special duty of four pence a gallon was imposed on importations of rum to meet this and other expenses necessary to increase the efficiency of the militia. In 1808 and 1809, over £11,000 was spent on arms and accou-

tirements. In the latter year an Act was passed which, among other things, provided some wholesale checks on dirty muskets and other military property, and also prohibited the use of government arms for private purposes.

On the 18th of June, 1812, the United States declared war against Great Britain, and for the next three years the militia of our province were kept on the *qui vive*. The news reached Halifax on the night of the 28th, and on the following morning a Council meeting was held, at which it was ordered to ballot men for service from the first class of the militia (which comprised all males from 18 to 50 years), and that a proportion in each district were to be at once embodied—mainly to protect the more exposed parts of the coasts. The House of Assembly met on 21st July and promptly dealt with the needs of the situation. £3,000 was ordered to be spent for arms and accoutrements, £8,000 for defensive works, £12,000 for extra pay—(with £10,000 more if required) and other necessary grants were made. One-fifth of the first class of militia were embodied. Hostilities soon began, but the duties of our provincial fighting men were limited throughout the war to defensive operations along the coast, chiefly in repelling attacks from the swarm of American privateers which infested our harbours and maritime settlements, and who often treated the fishermen and others of their prisoners with great harshness.

An important and businesslike Act of the Legislature was passed at this session, dealing with the militia and its embodiment for active service. It materially reduced the list of exemptions from liability to serve, provided for the treatment of negro or colored recruits, imposed heavy fines for evasion or infraction of the law, and otherwise enacted much to aid effective organization in time of emergency. In 1813, £50,000 more was voted by the House for militia purposes, at the special request of Sir John Sherbrooke. At this time the force consisted of two companies of Artillery and twenty-six battalions of Foot. During the year a return was issued showing that



**GEN. SIR. JOHN COAPE SHERBROOKE.**

(From a Painting in the Halifax Club, formerly in the Rockingham Club,  
by Robert Field.)



about 500 men of the various regiments were scattered along the coast in small parties, about 400 being detailed to act specially as escorts to prisoners of war. We know that they were kept busy at this work, as the number of captures made from time to time ran to a high figure. Two officers, six non-commissioned officers, and sixteen privates were reported as serving in the capacity of marines on board the Provincial armed sloop "Gleaner." We thus had a navy in 1814 as well as in 1911.

Peace came early in 1815; and at the session of the House held that year an Act was passed reducing the days of training from six to four annually, and also enacting that Justices of the Peace be hereafter exempt from the provision of the militia laws. The total number of the force, reported as effective on 1st March was about 12,000 of all ranks.

Nothing of interest is noted as having taken place during the next year or two, but in 1818 it was proposed by Lord Bathurst, in a communication to the Lieut. Governor, that the militia—which then consisted of about 12,000 men from sixteen to sixty years of age, and enrolled in 26 battalions,—be put on a more serviceable basis by changing the age limits from eighteen to forty-five, and reducing the number of battalions to twelve, each to be of 500 men; to have one Inspecting Field officer instead of four, and under him two Staff adjutants and three Staff sergeants. The Inspecting officer was to reside in Halifax—the others to go on their rounds through the country on tours of inspection; and the care of the block-houses along the coast be given to the militia nearest them. This proposal came before the House of Assembly, but was rejected there without a division, the members expressing themselves as being well satisfied with the existing system. This year the officers of the 3rd Halifax militia regiment gave a dinner in the Corporation Council Chamber, which was one of the most prominent social functions of the day.

In the following year another most animated debate took place in the House of Assembly on the changes suggested and

urged by the Imperial government. It was finally decided to agree in part to the proposal, and to make the age limits eighteen to sixty and the first class for service eighteen to forty; to add one day for battalion drill, and to provide for two Inspecting Field officers in place of the Adjutant General and Quarter Master General.

In May 1820, Lord Dalhousie, issued a General Order reducing the militia to one regiment in each county, with two in the town of Halifax. The establishment was to be as follows:

- One Lieut. Colonel.
- Two Majors.
- Ten Captains.
- Twenty 1st Lieuts.
- Twenty 2nd Lieuts.
- Ten Clerks.
- Forty Sergeants.
- Twenty Drummers.
- One thousand Rank and File.

On the embarkation of the Earl for Quebec on 5th June of this year the flank companies of the Halifax regiments, under command of Captains Liddel and Pyke, formed the Guard of Honour, and the Halifax Militia Artillery (Tremain's battery), fired the usual salutes. A few months later the Grenadier and Light companies of the 1st Halifax Regiment—then commanded by the Hon. T. N. Jeffrey, Collector of Customs—gave a grand ball in the Masonic Hall, which was attended by over three hundred persons.

The House of Assembly this year (1821), passed a new and very voluminous Act, embodying all militia legislation to date, and making many amendments and changes. It contained no less than ninety-three paragraphs or sections, and covered every possible phase of the legal government of the national force.

Reports of reviews, of salutes fired and such matters, formed the chief items of militia news for the next year or two.



L.T.-COL. RICHARD TREMAIN, Jr. (1802-1890.)  
1st Company (Halifax) Volunteer Artillery.



L.T.-COL. RICHARD TREMAIN, (1774-1854.)  
1st Company (Halifax) Volunteer Artillery, 1838.



More legislation was passed in 1823, but contained nothing of special importance. In August 1825, a review of the two Halifax battalions—commanded respectively, by Lieut. Colonels Jeffrey and DeBlois—and a brigade of Artillery, under Col. Tremain,—took place on the Common, the force in question having just finished its annual drill of four days. The Commander-in-Chief with his staff and other prominent officials were present; and the former expressed himself as being highly satisfied with the appearance and drill of the men. Eulogy of militia regiments—whether deserved or not—was doubtless as common eighty years ago as to-day.

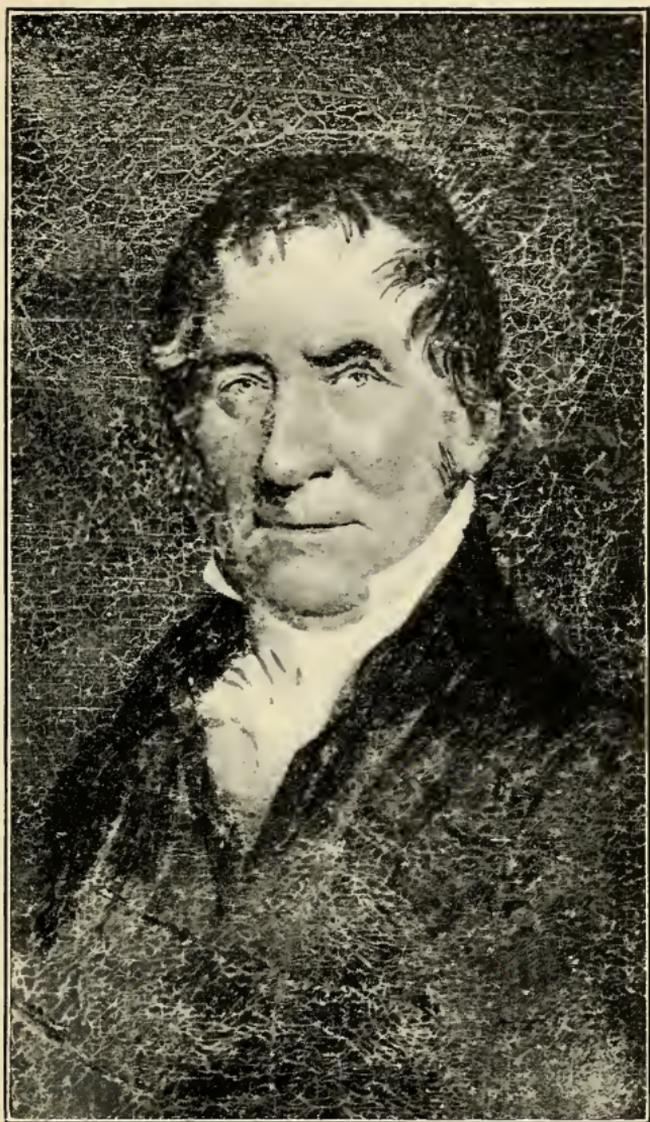
In 1826, more legislation was put through, and an Act passed making several changes of importance. The annual drills or musters were reduced to two, the fines for non-attendance, etc., altered, and a section added to the effect that no militiaman could be liable for arrest for any civil process during the time of his drill or muster, or going to same, or returning therefrom.

The strength of the force during the few years last covered showed a steady increase. In 1821 the official returns reported about 14,000 men; in 1822 17,000; in 1827 18,600; in 1828 23,000; in 1829 25,000, including about 4,500 men in Cape Breton; in 1830 about 26,000. The "Militia List" at latter date gives Lieut. Cols. Cochran and Loring as Inspecting Field officers, Lieut. Col. Forbes as Brigade Major, Lieut. Col. McColla as Adjutant General; two volunteer Artillery companies in Halifax (both commanded by officers named Tremain—a name synonymous with the growth and efficiency of our local forces), four battalions of Foot in Halifax, two in Colchester, two in Pictou, two in Sydney (now Antigonish), one in Cumberland, two in Hants, two in Kings, one in Parrsboro, two each in East and West Annapolis, four in Shelburne, one in Queens, two in Lunenburg and six in Cape Breton.

In the year 1830 the force as enrolled consisted of about 26,000 officers and men, divided into thirty-three battalions of Foot, and two volunteer Artillery companies—the latter

in the town of Halifax. His Excellency Lieut. Gov. Sir Peregrine Maitland, K. C. B., was commander-in-chief and in supreme control of the training and disposition of the militia of the Province; Lieut. Col. Hon. T. N. Jeffrey and Sir Rupert George were his aides-de-camps. The Lieutenant-Governor was a man of striking appearance; as commander of one of the regiments of Foot Guards, he had taken a prominent part in the battle of Waterloo. From both natural and acquired qualities he always commanded respect and obedience. Hon. T. N. Jeffrey was Collector of H. M. Customs—afterwards President of the Council and Administrator of the government. Sir Rupert George was secretary to His Excellency and clerk to the Council. The Quarter-master General was Major Edward Wallace: the Judge-Advocate General was the Hon. S. B. Robie. Lieut. Cols. Cochran, Loring and Marshall were Inspecting Field officers: Lieut. Col. McColla, Adjutant General, and Lieut. Col. Forbes Brigade Major. A few companies were uniformed—the volunteer Artillery, and one or more companies of the first Halifax regiment of Foot in blue with red facings, part of the second Halifax in scarlet with blue facings, and of the third regiment in green with red facings, all wearing gold lace; the great majority, however, paraded at the annual musters in civilian garb, and this doubtless in most localities of a quaint and essentially rustic appearance. The few who were armed carried the old flint-lock muskets obtained from the King's stores, or sent over from England as ordered. Many of these had doubtless done duty at Waterloo and in the later battles of the Peninsula.

Probably a fair sample of the condition of things at this time is the fact that in August Colonel J. Leander Starr, commanding the third Halifax regiment, reported that his battalion had no arms although it consisted of 1100 men and had been in existence for six years. A volunteer Rifle company had been formed by some of its members as a flank company; they had bought their own uniforms and imported a pair of colours, but they also were without muskets or rifles. They



**LT. COL. JOHN ALBRO, (1764-1839)**  
**4th. Halifax Regiment, (1833)**



had much spirit in the service, and wished to improve themselves; but without the essential weapons of a soldier could do but little.

At the risk of being tedious I will give a brief summary of the laws governing the force at this period.

1. All men in the Province from 16 to 60 years of age had to serve—with certain exemptions for judges, clergymen, etc., etc.

2. Militia thus recruited were formed into regiments, by counties or districts.

3. Regiments could be divided into battalions, of not less than 300 or more than 800 men in each.

4. Every man who failed to present himself for enrolment was fined 10/.

5. Every man over 21 was supposed to be furnished with, or to supply himself with musket, bayonet, box to hold 18 cartridges, and other necessaries. For the safe keeping of these he gave the government a bond for £5, with a surety.

6. All arms to be numbered and branded.

7. All arms were to be inspected once a year.

8. Any man parading with dirty or unserviceable weapons to be fined 2/6 to 10/.

9. Any man using them for fowling or private purposes to pay 5/ for each offence.

10. Any C. O. neglecting to promulgate orders for assembling his men shall pay £20.

11. Any man not attending a duly ordered muster (except for illness), fined 5/ to 20/, that is, 5/ first day, 10/ second day, and so on.

12. Any man leaving a muster without permission fined 5/ to 20/.

13. Officers not attending meetings fined, a major, £5, a captain £3, a subaltern £2, for each offence.

14. The Halifax corps to do their militia duties before 1st April in each year.

15. All guard and special duties to be divided equally among the men. Refusal fine 10/.

16. All enforced service over 6 days to be paid for at army rates of pay.

17. Men giving false alarms fined £10.

18. Any man drunk or insubordinate on duty to be put in gaol for from 12 to 72 hours.

19. There is to be a regimental Adjutant who will get £15 a year.

20. N. C. officers to be appointed by Cpts. of companies.

21. A Sergt.-Major and Clerk to be appointed to each regiment.

22. Returns, rolls, and rosters, to be submitted to Government twice a year.

23. Interrupting the Major at exercises or duty fined 10/.

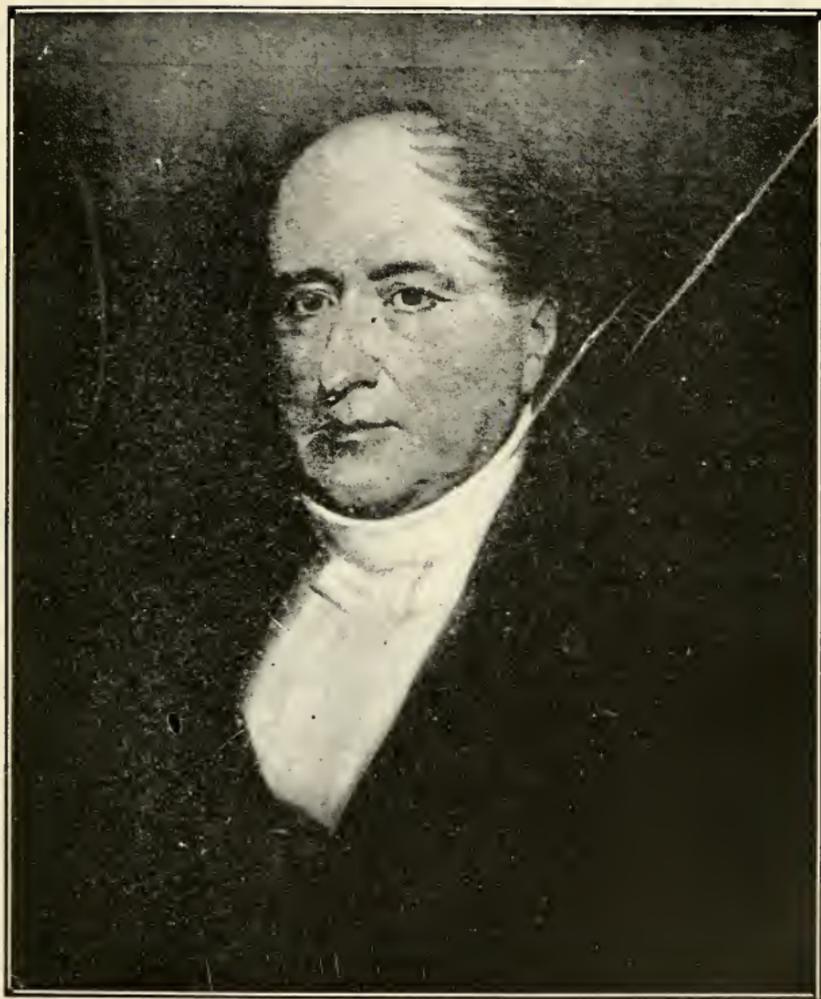
24. Medical Board to report on men who plead illness for non-attendance.

25. If active service (or "real service" as called), is ordered, men to be chosen by ballot from those between 18 and 45 years.

26. Clerks and laborers in H. M. Ordnance Stores and Naval Yard need not serve, but must provide substitutes at their own expense.

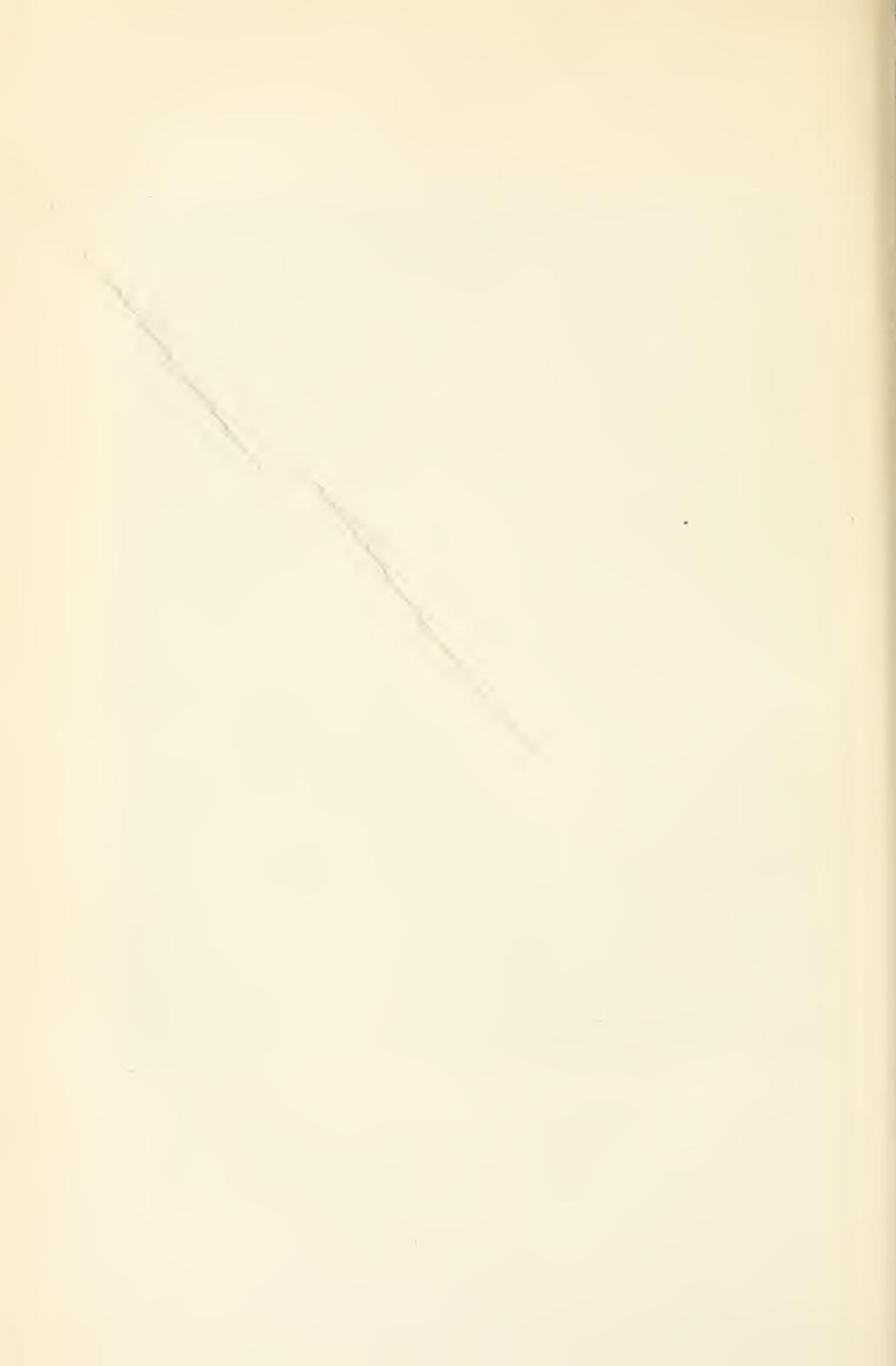
There is little of interest to chronicle in this and the years immediately following. The running expenses of the force at the beginning of this period were about fifteen hundred pounds per annum, exclusive of what was spent in the purchase of arms and accoutrements: and there is nothing to indicate that this figure was exceeded to any appreciable extent during the next few years.

In 1831 a new battalion was formed in Sydney county (now Antigonish), and one in Cape Breton. In April of same year the 5th Halifax regiment was also organized, its strength being obtained by detaching the five Musquodoboit companies of the 3rd regiment, and the Shubenacadie company of the 4th. In 1832 another regiment was formed in Halifax county and



**LT.-COL. THOMAS RITCHIE, (1777-1852.)**  
**Annapolis Regiment.**

(From an oil painting in the possession of Captain Jas. D. Ritchie.)



one in Hants; in 1833 another in Cape Breton, making a total of eight from that island. Seven hundred pounds was granted by the House to pay the Inspecting Field officers, whose salaries, as well as the other trifling amounts required for militia purposes, were always a bone of contention between the two political parties.

Social functions were not lacking in connection with military life. In January the Rifle company of the 1st Halifax regiment gave a ball in the Masons' Hall; in February the Rifle company of the 3rd regiment, and in March the Light company of the 2nd regiment repeated this popular form of entertainment. This is merely mentioned as chronicling what took place yearly during the remainder of the period now covered, and need not be referred to again: it is sufficient to say that the old militia force furnished many a bright spot of colour in the entertainment of the good citizens of Halifax at dances, and dinners, besides making a brave show at Guards of Honour and other duty parades. At the opening of the Legislature in that year for instance, the Grenadier and Light companies of the first Halifax furnished a Guard of Honour, the Imperial service being represented by the Rifle Brigade—the first battalion of which famous regiment was then in garrison. On 5th August the first regiment paraded, and the "Flatfoot" companies marched through the Dutch village to participate in a sham fight. The men were supplied with bread, cheese, and porter at the expense of the President and then Administrator of the Government, Lieutenant Colonel the Hon. T. N. Jeffrey.

In 1834 the force showed a total of 41 battalions, Cape Breton leading with 8, Halifax County 5, Shelburne county 4, the rest tailing off to one each in Queens and Cumberland. Legislation of some little importance went through the House, chiefly relating to payment of Adjutants and repairs of arms, but also increasing the penalty for false returns, and providing that no regiment should be required to assemble more than once in each year. £700 was voted for Inspecting Field

officers, and the pay of Adjutants was fixed at 15 shillings a day—the latter clause carrying by the close vote of 20 to 17. Two years later the usual fit of economy in militia matters attacked our legislators and the grant to Inspecting Field officers was cancelled by a vote of 23 to 13, much to the annoyance of the Governor, Sir Colin Campbell, who forcibly expressed his views on the subject in his prorogation speech. We learn that at or near this period, the officers of the first King's county regiment were uniformed in blue coat and pantaloons, boots, buff vest, round hat, gold epaulets, and silk sash. The first Cape Breton wore blue jackets faced with red cuffs and collars and white trousers.

Militia "Dress" companies now appear on the roll, such as the Highland Grenadiers, and the Light Infantry, attached to the first Halifax regiment and wearing the regulation blue coat faced with red but with plain trousers; also the Rifle company in black with velvet facings. To the second Halifax was attached a Light Infantry company in scarlet jacket with blue facings, while to the third Halifax belonged another Rifle company uniformed in sombre black. The Antigonish Artillery company, the Annapolis Artillery, the Shelburne Artillery, and the Liverpool Artillery, also come on the scene, all in blue uniforms faced with red.

In 1837 the returns show 43 battalions with a nominal strength of 1294 Officers and 30,394 rank and file. The strength of these units varied greatly—from 1813 officers and men in the second battalion of the second regiment of Cape Breton, to the third battalion of King's county, which mustered only 325 of all ranks.

The total expenditure by the colony on militia this year was £929. It may be mentioned, in passing, that the military disbursements for the same period by the Imperial Government in Nova Scotia were £62,988.

The practical extinction of drill in the rural militia (as the muster once a year gave practically no opportunity for train-

ing), and the cessation of payment to Inspecting Officers, had by this time evidently reduced the country corps to inefficiency, as the Governor in opening the session of 1838 called the special attention of the House to the useless state of the force. The rebellion in the Canadas was raging, and the reply of the Assembly to His Excellency's speech expressed deep regret at the existence of the insurrection, and joy that its efforts to overturn good and stable government had met with deserved defeat; also promising to carry out whatever reasonable reforms might be deemed necessary in the militia force of the province. The matter was referred to a special committee of seven members of the House who reported in favour of certain changes, all of which, however, were of comparatively little value and importance, as may be judged by the fact that the Adjutant-General was to receive the munificent sum of £30. per annum. It is, however, only fair to add that a resolution moved by Mr. Joseph Howe was unanimously passed, which authorized an expenditure not exceeding £10,000 for militia purposes should war take place between the Mother country and the United States or any other foreign country, or upon any hostile invasion of the province.

In the following year (1839) New Brunswick was menaced by invaders—one of the long drawn series of border troubles which began in 1829 and continued at intervals until well into the forties. The news reached Halifax on the 26th of February and action was immediately taken. Great excitement prevailed, and all other legislative business was suspended in favor of matters pertaining to joining and assisting the sister province in defending its soil from hostile attack. Nova Scotia spoke with no uncertain voice. A series of most important resolutions were passed authorising the immediate calling out for active service (if necessary) of one third of the total militia force of the province; and other measures tending to efficiency, national defence, and inter-provincial assistance. were adopted.

New Brunswick responded with hearty and eloquent letters of thanks, and the whole episode forms an interesting chapter in

the history of the two Provinces. Under date of 2nd May, Lord Glenelg, on behalf of Her Majesty's government, warmly endorsed the action taken by the Governor and Assembly at this juncture. Legislation for raising the necessary volunteers for active service, if required, was put through on 30th March.

At this period the force had grown into 44 regiments of Foot and 5 Artillery companies, two of the latter in Halifax, and one each in Guysborough, Lunenburg, and Chester.

A glimpse of some features of the interior economy of the militia is given in the report of a meeting of the officers of the third Halifax regiment held in the Exchange Coffee House, Halifax, on 10th March, 1839, when they established the following regimental fund:

Lieutenant Colonel to pay	20	shillings.
Majors	15	"
Captains	10	"
Subalterns	5	"

The caps to be worn by the officers in full dress to be bell crowned and to be mounted with bronze plumes, also to wear gold epaulets or wings in full dress; at drill or undress, green trousers, blue frock and blue forage cap with strap under the chin, sash, belt and sword.

The threatened trouble with the United States blew over, however, and military matters remained on their normal footing.

One day's muster or drill was all that was required by law, although we know that at any rate the Halifax regiments—(or parts of them), drilled frequently, took part in ceremonial and other parades from time to time, and were undoubtedly in a fair state of efficiency. In March 1840 more militia legislation passed the House, one clause of which authorized Artillery, Grenadier, Light Infantry, or Rifle companies to make



ADJUTANT HENRY PRYOR,  
(2nd or Queen's Halifax Regiment.)



by-laws imposing fines, etc. The Adjutant-General's grant was increased to £100. and that of the Quarter-Master-General to £50; per contra, the maximum payment of any regimental adjutant was reduced from £15 to £10 per annum. £144 17s. was spent on arms; and the total outlay for the force this year appears to have been slightly over £1000. Economy became more in evidence, however, in 1841, when the grants to the Adjutant-General and Quarter-Master-General were respectively reduced to £80 and £40. At this time there was also a Judge Advocate of militia, Andrew M. Uniacke, who received £11 7s. for special services. Another long Act was passed this year containing not less than 134 sections embodying everything of importance (and otherwise), on the subject up to date. A petition signed by Joshua Lee, Henry Piers and W. G. Anderson, captains of volunteer companies of militia in Halifax, asking that the men under their command be exempted from statute labour, was presented to the House of Assembly, but was ordered to be withdrawn.

On the 23rd of December the Flank and Artillery companies of the Halifax regiments participated in the public festivities of that day in honour of the birth of the Prince of Wales (King Edward VII). In 1842, twenty-five pounds was spent on the blockhouse at Lunenburg, to garrison which a company of Artillery had been formed there.

In July of this year the Adjutant General of the force, Edward Wallace, wrote some observations on the militia law then in force which shows that the old system which gave four days training and inspection by a field officer from the Imperial Army had now been reduced to one day's muster, with no regular inspector. What little training existed was largely left to the imagination and knowledge of the commanding officer of the regiment, and consequently these annual musters amounted simply to a roll-call with imposition of fines; there was time for nothing else. The young officers had practically no opportunity of learning their work. The Dress Flank companies which used to be so smart and had furnished so many

men for duty, were now fast breaking up. Altogether the system was in a deplorable state.

The above report led to an examination by J. W. Johnston, then prominent in the Government, who made a report on it to His Excellency on 30th June, 1842. As may have been expected from a civilian it was very non-committal and excused the lack of efficient training and work, by a wish to save the people's time and money.

In 1844 an Act was passed cancelling all musters, drill or training of the militia, unless specially ordered: also providing that no more payments be made to regimental adjutants—their occupation, like Othello's, being gone.

Matters drifted along in this easy-going way for several years with the little or nothing of interest to mention. In 1852 the Assembly seems to have waked up a little in regard to militia matters, and stock was taken of the various arms and accoutrements in possession of the force. This showed that a total of about seven thousand muskets and four hundred rifles were in use or available, the same being distributed (proportionately to enrolled strength), among the greater number of the various regiments—eleven corps, however, being totally unarmed. A committee examined or took evidence on the state of these arms and other stores, and practically condemned them all and recommended that they be sold at public auction. This proposition did not meet the views of Downing Street, who naturally wished to see other and more efficient arms available before disposing of the old ones, bad as the latter undoubtedly were. No further action appears to have been taken.

Early in 1854 war was declared against Russia. Nova Scotia, in common with the other British North American colonies, entered heartily into the spirit of the contest, both Legislative Council and House of Assembly sending addresses to Her Majesty, expressive of loyalty and willingness to assist by maintaining the defence of the province should the rights



**ANDREW MITCHELL UNIACKE, ESQ., (1809-1895.)**  
**Judge Advocate of Militia.**



of the British Empire be attacked on these coasts. In forwarding these, the Lt.-Governor, Sir Gaspard LeMarchant, very optimistically informed the Imperial authorities that if the exigencies of warfare made it expedient or necessary to withdraw one or both of the regiments then in garrison in Halifax, an effective military force could be raised in the Province to undertake the duties of the garrison, and which force could, if circumstances made it necessary, be augmented to a strength of fifty thousand men. The authorities, however, retained here one regiment, the 76th, throughout the war, so the suggested embodiment of part of the provincial militia did not take place.

In the spring of 1855 an amending Act to the existing militia laws was passed, which embodied several features of interest. The Governor-in-Council was authorized to dispose of all un-serviceable arms and stores, and to expend a sum not exceeding two thousand pounds on new material. Also to form Artillery, Light Infantry, Grenadier or Rifle companies, to be composed of volunteers (distinct from the militia), to serve in such companies, uniforms and saddlery to be provided at volunteer's own expense; no pay was specified, the honour of serving being considered a sufficient emolument. This clause, however, merely legalized conditions which had already existed for fifteen or twenty years in the Nova Scotia forces. A sign of the times was the grant this year, of thirty pounds to pay for the alteration from flint to percussion of fifty rifles for the use of the Pictou volunteer Artillery companies.

In 1856 nothing of interest is recorded: but early in 1857 the Lieut. Governor, in response to instructions received from the Imperial government, transmitted an elaborate report on the state of Nova Scotia militia at that period, which space does not permit repetition here, but which is well worth careful examination by those interested.

An item worth noting was the request in 1858 of a number of Germans lately belonging to the Foreign Legion, but now residing at the Acadia Iron Mines, Londonderry, to be allowed to

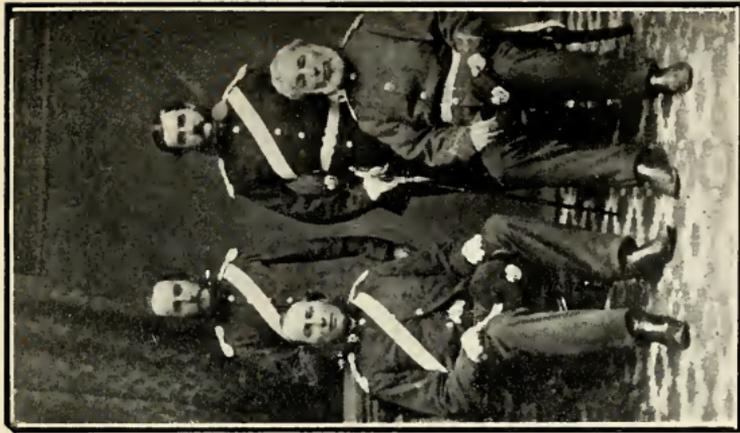
form a volunteer company of militia. Nothing definite appears to have resulted from this.

We have now reached the period of practical citizen soldiering which, with certain changes, is in existence today. The volunteer movement of 1859 was one of the events of the century, and revolutionized the habits, thoughts, health and aims of millions of Britons, young and old, in all parts of the Empire. While it at first in British North America as well as in Great Britain ran concurrently with the old constitutional force, the two eventually formed one body governed largely by the more vigorous organization of voluntary service which resulted in the present volunteer militia. In the Mother-land, as all know, the two forces pursued separate and distinct courses until a very few years ago when they joined hands, renewed their youth, and now flourish under the somewhat cumbrous and unmeaning title of "Territorials." Nova Scotia was early in the game, thanks to the foresight of the energetic Lieut. Governor the Earl of Mulgrave, and in the fall and winter of 1859 and 1860 a large number of military organizations of this nature were formed. The Lieut. Governor had always absolute control in such matters, and there being no Minister or departmental head to interfere, party politics could not exert their baneful influence as in Canada a few years ago.

During the early months of 1859 the Earl of Mulgrave sent home a series of reports on the state of the provincial militia which gave a certain amount of information about the then condition of the force, but were chiefly devoted to suggestions for the formation of volunteer rifle corps throughout the colonies, and asking the approval of the Imperial authorities for the carrying out of his proposals. These reports are of much importance in view of their far reaching results. He asked for the loan of sufficient modern and serviceable arms to equip such a force: but the home authorities in acknowledging his first despatch, and expressing their approval of his suggestions, stated that its supply of modern rifles was as yet insufficient for the needs of even the regular army and that therefore none could



LT.-COL. GEO. R. ANDERSON, (left).  
 LT.-COL. A. K. MACKINLAY, (right).  
 (Uniform of Scottish Rifles.)



Standing left—ADJT. J. N. RITCHIE,  
 " right—MAJOR B. W. SALTER,  
 Sitting right—MAJOR — BRIAND,  
 " left—LT. COL. JAMES B. OXLEY.





**LT.-COL. ANDREW KERR MACKINLAY, (1831-1889.)**  
**Halifax Volunteer Battalion. Captain 1860, Major 1865,**  
**Lt.-Colonel 1870.**



be spared, adding very sensibly "that in a large and prosperous colony such as Nova Scotia, the cost of arming its militia is not "a charge which should be derived from the Imperial treasury." Time does not permit me to give in detail any more of the voluminous correspondence on the subject between Downing Street and the Lieut. Governor; it is sufficient to say that its outcome was of a nature most gratifying to all patriotic Nova Scotians.

In June Lord Mulgrave sent a circular letter to the commanding officer of each militia regiment in the province asking him to use his best endeavours to raise one or more volunteer companies. Almost concurrently with this action of the Governor, Major-General Sir Fenwick Williams of Kars, a native of Nova Scotia, was sent from England to assume the command of the forces in British North America. He was warmly interested in the volunteer movement, and in September was instrumental in forwarding to Halifax three thousand rifles for use in this connection. These arrived on the first of November and were soon put to good use. The honour of being the premier organization in the new movement fell to the easternmost point of the province and as early as September of this year (1859) the Governor was able to report the existence of a corps of one hundred and seventy men at Sydney Mines, closely followed by one of one hundred and twenty rank and file at Albion Mines. The General Mining Association, then proprietors of the collieries at Sydney Mines, generously provided uniforms for the whole of these companies.

By midsummer of 1860 thirty volunteer companies had been organized and were officially recognized. They represented all parts of the Province, No. 1 being in Yarmouth, No. 30 in Sydney, and numbered about twenty-three hundred men in all. Halifax and Dartmouth furnished six of these corps, known severally as the Scottish Rifles, Chebucto Greys, Mayflower Rifles, Halifax Rifles, Irish Volunteer Rifles and the Dartmouth Engineers. They were divided into eleven companies with a strength of over eight hundred rank and file.

In May, six of these companies were formed into a battalion known as the Halifax Volunteer battalion, under command of Capt. Chearnley of the Chebucto Greys. The visit of the Prince of Wales to this province in July kept all the newly formed volunteers on the *qui vive*, guards of honour being furnished at various stations, while other functions received all necessary attention from the new and popular soldiery.

All bought their own uniforms, the selection of which was purely a voluntary matter by each unit. This naturally resulted in a marked lack of similarity—all colours being represented—but it brought variety, and a wholesome measure of rivalry between the different corps or companies. Sir Fenwick Williams of Kars at this time became Honorary Colonel of the Halifax battalion.

While certain legislation in 1855 had authorized the formation of volunteers in connection with special companies of the regular recognised militia of the province, its scope was naturally a very limited one, far short of what the present movement demanded. Accordingly in May of this year (1860), was passed "*An Act to provide for the organization of a volunteer militia force for the defence of this Province.*" Its preamble was worded in a lofty and dignified manner. It read:

"Whereas while large standing armies are maintained by the "despotic powers of Europe, it is necessary that the physical "resources of the British Empire should be ascertained and "organized, that its integrity may be preserved, its commerce "protected, and its powers and influence maintained."

"And whereas the youth of this Province have shown a "laudable spirit of emulation in coming forward to enroll them- "selves as volunteers for the defence of their country, and it is "necessary to provide them with the means of acquiring such "discipline and training as will render them an effective force "for that purpose:"



**LT.-COLONEL WILLIAM CHEARNLEY,**

**Late Captain 8th (or King's) Regt. of Foot; Captain Commanding Chebucto Greys; Lt.-Colonel of Halifax Volunteer Battalion, 1865; Died 1870.**



“Be it therefore enacted by the Governor, Council, and Assembly,” and so on:

Its chief enactments were,

1. That the Governor may spend a sum not exceeding \$8000.00 per annum in payment of the services of staff officers and drill sergeants who have been trained in the British army, and in the purchase and disposition of arms, accoutrements, ammunition, etc., necessary for said volunteer force.

2. The Governor may combine the volunteer companies so raised with the militia regiments of the counties from which they are drawn, or may organize and drill them as a separate and distinct force.

It also contained other provisos of minor importance.

The movement so well begun by Lord Mulgrave and so vigorously taken up by the young men of the province, thus received official sanction, and was now legally armed for expansion and fresh effort.

Nothing special appears to have marked the latter months of 1860 so far as militia matters were concerned; but the zeal of the newly formed volunteer corps showed no abatement, and the movement made substantial progress. Uniforms for the various companies were adopted, and put into use as soon as they could be obtained. Full details of these (so far as the Halifax companies are concerned), and a large amount of other valuable information is given by Lieut. Col. Egan (late 63rd regiment), in his very interesting book entitled, “*The Halifax Volunteer Battalion and Volunteer companies 1859-1877*,” printed in 1888;—the only regimental history published in this province that I know of.

Rifle shooting now began to be a leading feature of a good soldier's work and the rifle range at Point Pleasant was the scene of many a hardly-fought encounter between the various local commands. In October 1861 the first general rifle com-

petition—open to volunteers from all parts of the province—was held at Windsor, and Halifax men carried off most of the honours of the day.

Some legislation of importance to the force went through the House this year, and can be summarized as follows:

1. Provisions of the militia laws to apply as much as possible to volunteer corps.
2. Members of all corps to be divided into three classes: effective, non-effective and honorary.
3. Volunteers to be exempt from statute labour.
4. Each corps may pass by-laws, levy fines, etc., and the means for collecting latter are defined.

In November the Lieut. Governor made his usual report for the information of the Imperial authorities, dealing chiefly with the arms, old and new, then in the colony and available for the citizen soldiery: also with the deficiencies that existed in this respect and what equipment would be available in case of a sudden emergency.

Civil war was then raging in the neighboring republic, and the relations between the latter and the British North American provinces were somewhat strained. Within a very few weeks they approached closely to the breaking point, the seizure of the Southern commissioners on board the British ship "Trent" forcing decisive action on the Queen's government and arousing an intensely warlike spirit through all B. N. A. This incident had a marvellously stimulating effect on the auxiliary forces of the colonies, bringing into existence many units which have since developed into the leading military organizations of the Dominion. In December the Adjutant General reported that great anxiety has been manifested by the enrolled volunteers both in the metropolis and in the country to learn their duties and drill. His report also stated that thirty-seven companies existed in the province with a total effective strength of 1516

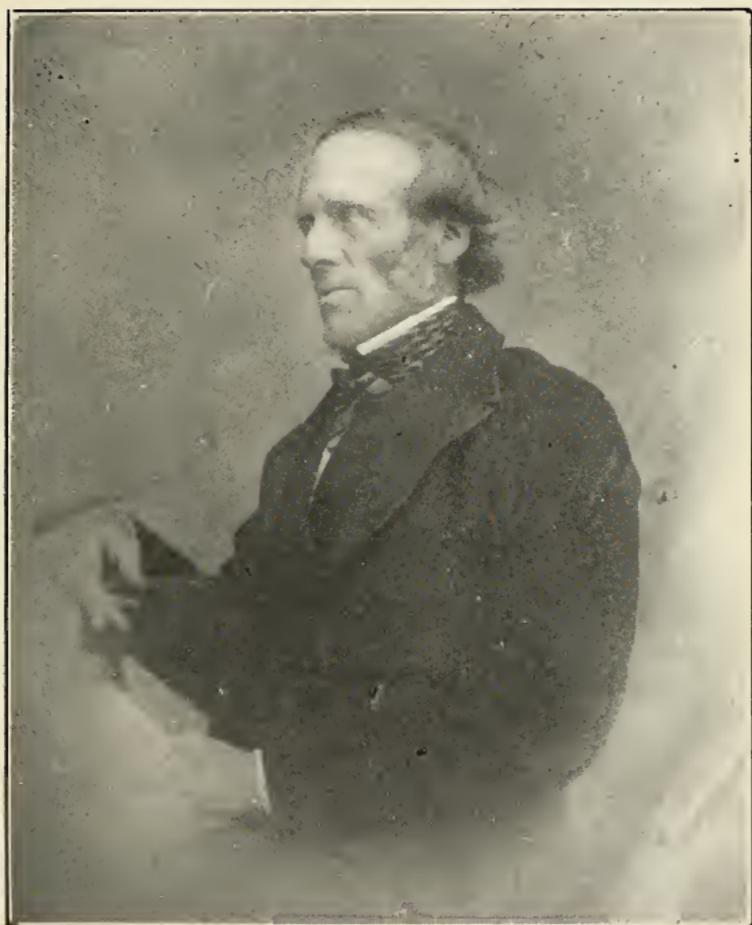


**CAPT EDMUND MONTGOMERY H. VIETH,**  
Adjutant 15th Regt. N. S. Militia.  
(In full-dress uniform, 1867.)



**LT.-COLONEL WILLIAM H. CREIGHTON,**  
2nd Brigade (Halifax County) Artillery,  
N. S. Militia, from about 1866.  
(Undress uniform, with forage-cap.)





**LT.-COL. RICHARD BROWN, F.G.S., F.R.G.S., (1805-1882.)**  
**Sydney Mines Volunteers.**  
(Author of History of the Island of Cape Breton published in 1869.)



officers and men, and 645 non-effective—the latter being chiefly recruits who had not yet had time to qualify: and that 2038 rifles had been issued to the various corps. In the following March (1862) the strength had increased to fifty companies with approximately 2500 members.

It was now fully recognized that the provincial militia (which must not be confused with the volunteers or volunteer militia), practically existed only on paper, and was useless as a military force: the annual reports of this and the preceding year make this point clear. Most of the officers were much over age, and disinclination to resign was as marked as the inability to do efficient duty. The force is reported as being disintegrated and utterly unorganized, although its nominal strength at this period was about 44,000 officers and men in 48 country regiments, the available arms *of any value* for the whole outfit being only 200 rifles. It was also officially recommended that "it is most desirable that the militia and volunteer service "of this province should go hand in hand and that in the matter "of training they should cordially co-operate." With this, no doubt, in view, a new militia act passed the House this year, which embodied and combined all previous legislation on both militia and volunteers. This was a most important piece of work, fully up to date, in that it recognized the existing liability of a sudden transition from peace to war, and enacted measures dealing effectively with any emergency that might call for the whole strength of the province to be exerted. It contained 133 clauses. The militia force of the province was in a sense legally rejuvenated, and put on a new and fairly serviceable footing. Much energy was exerted in the re-organization, and an excellent report of the Adjutant-General, Colonel Sinclair, covering his work in this connection, specifies the methods adopted towards the desired end. He points out that the old organization had first to be cancelled, and all appointments and promotions officially stopped, until a certain measure of efficiency could be fulfilled by the applicants; that the officers of the old force were, as a whole, useless, and

many of them had to be asked to resign; they were replaced by younger and more energetic men trained for a certain specified period under capable imperial officers and N. C. O., and were required to pass examinations as proof of their efficiency before being gazetted or promoted.

The volunteers played an important role in this reorganization by furnishing many of its most efficient men to the commissioned ranks of the various militia regiments through the province.

The net amount expended by the local government this year on militia and volunteer purposes was \$19,417.69—a marked contrast to the state of things a very few years earlier when one-tenth of that sum was considered excessive.

The Militia Act in 1862 was extended next year by placing the force when called out for active service under the Mutiny Act and Articles of War, and subject to all other laws then applicable to Her Majesty's troops in the province with the exception of corporal punishment. Other changes were made by the Act, but of a minor nature.

Drills and parades were steadily gone on with by the volunteers this year; also the militia had the privilege of no less than five days duty, each daily parade being for four hours: in addition to this the officers were required to perform twenty-eight drills each of three hours duration. The volunteers turned out also with the sister force during the year now under mention. Four of these general parades were devoted to company drill and one to battalion movements.

A review was held on the 21st June, in which the Windsor, Halifax and Truro volunteer companies paraded with the Imperial troops. In October the provincial rifle matches were held in Truro and in a general way the spirit of evincing an earnest desire for progress was shown. In this year's report to the Home Authorities, the Lieut.-Governor stated "That there is in this province at present a very laudable desire to improve the



**LT.-COLONEL JOHN WIMBURN LAURIE, (1835-1912).**  
Deputy Adjutant-General of Militia.





**LT. COLONEL THOMAS MILSON.**  
Born in Bath 1819, Died in Halifax 1888.



“local defences of the country. The Legislature, besides continuing to grant £5,000 voted last year, have further sanctioned a small payment being made to the adjutants of the different militia regiments; they have also voted £1,000 for the erection of an armoury in the city of Halifax, and the payment out of the provincial treasury of one-third of the cost of the erection of drill rooms whenever the remaining two-thirds are raised by local contributions. That the residents themselves have shown an eager readiness to qualify for their militia duties, and that a very large proportion of the officers have already attended or are at present attending drill.”

In 1864 the committee on the militia (consisting of seven members of the Legislative Assembly), recommended expenditure on a liberal scale for the efficient maintenance and improvement of the force, and expressed their gratification at the readiness and loyal response of the inhabitants of this province to the call made upon them to perform militia duty. “The deportment and orderly behaviour of the men, thus forced to an unaccustomed work, has been an unceasing theme of praise, and shows that the military spirit of Nova Scotians is not extinct but ready for action should the cry of war be ever heard within our borders.”

An account of the militia at this period would be incomplete without mention of its Adjutant General Col. R. Bligh Sinclair (formerly of H. M. 42nd and 21st regiments), who was a capable and hard working officer. His periodical reports to the Lieut.-Governor and others are full of information, and teem with various suggestions for the improvement of the militia. He was ably seconded by a capable staff of Inspecting Field officers, prominent among whom was the late Lieut.-General Laurie, then a captain in H. M. 4th regiment (King's Own), but holding provincial rank of Lieut.-Col. The high degree of serviceable efficiency to which the force attained during the next few years, was, in no small measure, due to the energy of this officer, and of his *confreres* Lieut.-Cols. Crewe-Reade, Milsom, and Sawyer.

From 1861 to 1867 a varying number of capable drill sergeants of the Imperial army were employed for instructional purposes. They were a highly efficient body of men and underwent much hardship at times in the execution of their duty when visiting remote sections of the province in winter—all for very moderate remuneration. Their work was of the greatest possible benefit to the force.

In those days the official representatives of the Sovereign were often men of prominence, and the Lieut.-Governor at this time—the gallant Sir Fenwick Williams of Kars—personally supervised the militia and its work, and was a prominent factor in its success. As a soldier he naturally took the keenest possible interest in its welfare.

Much good work was done during this year (1864), towards maintaining and improving the force. The counties were divided into regimental districts: the officers and non-commissioned officers were brought into closer touch with the men under their command: the appointment of regimental adjutants was made one of competition, not of favor: and the position of commanding officer of a regiment was conditional on his efficiency, and not necessarily on his seniority in the corps. On 30th June 105 regiments appeared on the roll, with a total strength of 48,675 officers and men: six months later this had grown to 110 regiments embracing 56,111 of all ranks. During this year Gen. Hastings Doyle in the course of an interesting report to the Duke of Newcastle said “I was perfectly amazed at finding that in five days each regiment was able to perform three or four useful battalion manoeuvres very well, proving the aptitude of the population generally for militia services; and I have little doubt that they will continue to improve: they deserve the greatest possible credit for the spirited manner in which they have responded to the call upon them for their services, for although the report of the Adjutant General of Militia shows 48,675 were enrolled and that 13,792 were absent from training, it must be borne in mind with reference



**CAPTAIN GEORGE PIERS, 1830-1910.**  
**Commanding Chebucto Greys' Company,**  
**Halifax Volunteer Battalion.**

(In full-dress uniform adopted in 1865: rifle-green  
with red facings.)

From a photograph taken about 1868.





**LT. GENERAL SIR CHARLES HASTINGS DOYLE, 1805-1883.**  
Appointed to Command the Forces in Nova Scotia in 1861.  
(From a Photograph.)



“to the latter that a large proportion of that number were “engaged in maritime pursuits.”

The volunteers continued in good form in the city of Halifax, but throughout the province their efficiency was subjected to a rigid test, a high standard being insisted on; only twenty-two efficient companies were reported in existence on 31st December, 1864; within a few months several of these were disbanded. Authority for the raising of seventeen more had been given and commissions issued to the officers: but for one reason or another they failed to organize.

In February, 1865, a special militia court was convened. It was composed of twenty-one officers, chiefly Lieut.-Colonels in command of regiments, and spent a week in deliberating on measures for the improvement of the force. It made several interesting and important suggestions, some of which were embodied in a new and voluminous Act passed by the Legislature a few weeks later.

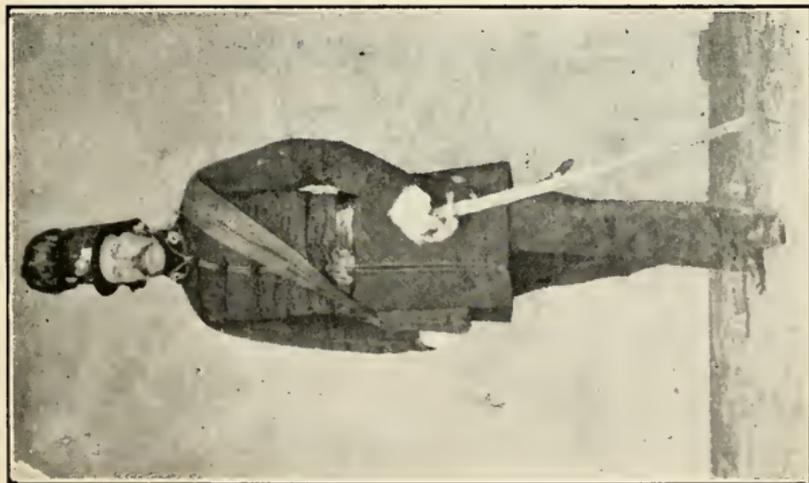
The practice of the local forces this year was considered satisfactory. Besides the ordinary annual training of regiments, 38 Adjutants received a special course of sixty days drill at head-quarters with excellent results. Militia Artillery brigades had been organized in Halifax, Pictou, Digby, Annapolis and Sydney Mines. Five Halifax regiments of Foot, with a nominal strength of 3250 men, were also converted into Artillery to aid more effectively in the defence of the city. Interest in rifle shooting continued to increase and the meeting held at Bedford was a decided success. The roll of efficient regiments was 106 at the end of the year. These, with the Artillery just mentioned, gave a nominal strength of 59,379 of all ranks, of which a very large percentage turned out for the usual training. A large number of rifles were issued, as well as two thousand uniforms, while six thousand sets of accoutrements were obtained from the Imperial stores.

The amount voted for militia this year, \$81,578, broke all records.

As the militia gained ground both in efficiency and numbers, the volunteers gradually weakened, and, by the end of the year, had shrunk to twelve companies, six of them being in Halifax. This unlooked-for outcome was in marked contrast to the experience of the other B. N. A. provinces, where the volunteer movement flourished greatly, and became the basis of Canada's present system. Nova Scotia thus occupied a unique position in maintaining and developing a strong and fairly efficient system of what was practically universal military service.

It must be borne in mind however that the volunteer branch of the service was to a large extent a training school for the commissioned ranks of the militia, the "Chebucto Greys" Rifle company for instance having furnished no less than forty-three officers and the Scottish Rifle company, twenty-nine.

The whole organization was now to have a test of its efficiency—a test, which, though by no means a severe one, was sufficient to show, up to a certain limited degree, the merits and demerits of the system. Fenianism had been rampant for several months along the American boundary line: arms had been gathered, and other preparations for a raid on the B. N. A. provinces had been made with but little secrecy. Pillage had occurred, and the peace of all Canada was imperilled. Precautionary measures were taken by all the provinces, and on Saturday, 17th March, 1866, Sir Fenwick Williams of Kars, as Lieut.-Gov. and Commander-in-Chief, ordered out the Nova Scotia militia for active service, that is, to be in such a position as to be instantly summoned to arms if required. His proclamation was read to both Legislative Council and House of Assembly on the 19th, whereupon resolutions were unanimously passed by both Houses approving the Lt.-Governor's actions, and undertaking to provide for any expense required for the adequate protection of the province. All the members of both Council and Assembly then proceeded to Government House and personally presented the resolution to His Excellency, as a proof of their earnestness in the matter. The pro-

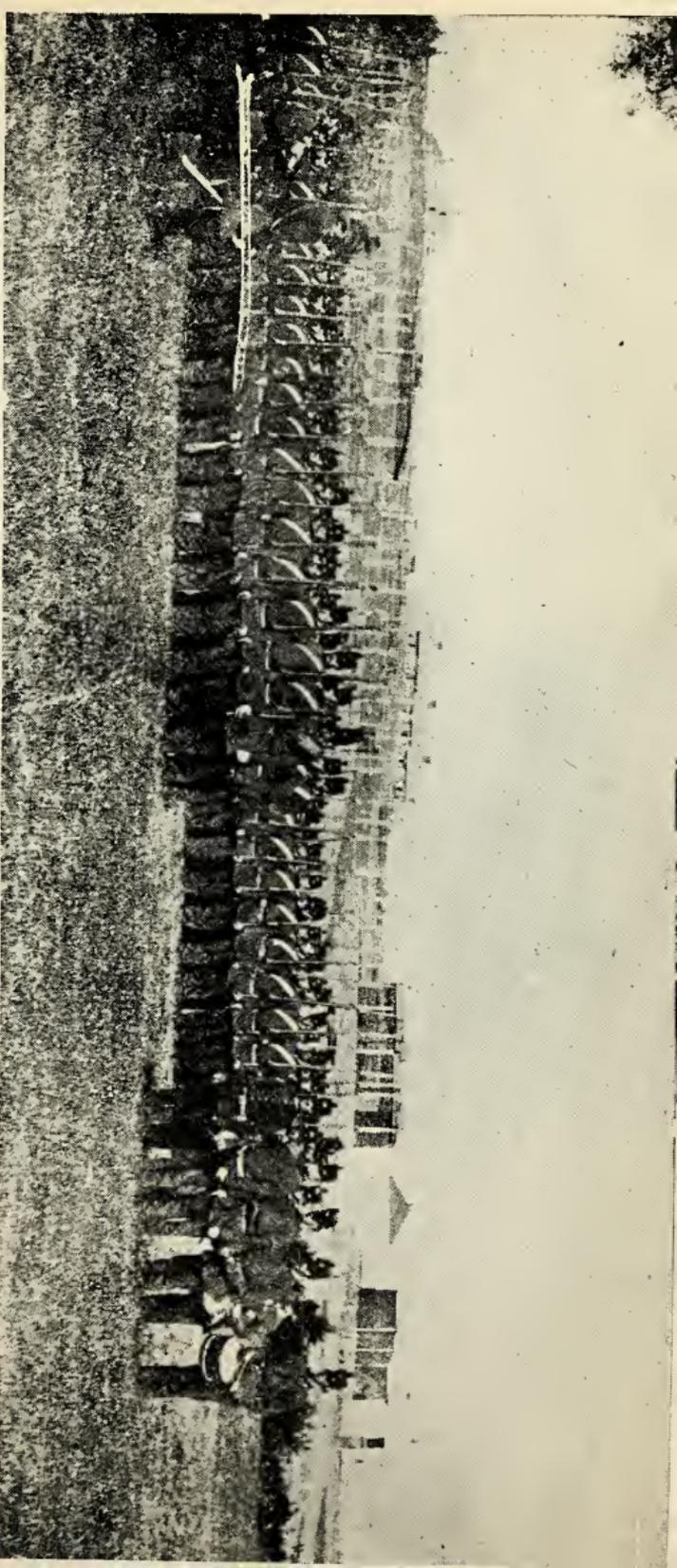


**MAJOR YORKE AINSLIE WALKER  
BARRINGTON, (1816-1893.)**  
(Uniform of Sydney Mines Volunteers.)



**LT.-COL. HON. WILLIAM ANDERSON BLACK,**  
(1789-1864.)  
4th Halifax Regiment, 1842.





### SYDNEY MINES VOLUNTEERS,

Organized 1859, under Lt.-Col. Richard Brown.

Through the courtesy of The North Sydney Herald. From a photograph in the possession of Lady Barrington. (1861.)

The picture represents the 4th regiment of militia in training at Sydney Mines. The company is being drilled by the late Lt.-Col. Richard Brown, Major Yorke Barrington, Captain Bridge and Capt. R. H. Brown. On the right of the first line is the late Sir Yorke Barrington. Other officers in the picture are the late Harry W. Archibald, Mr. Harry Fraser, Henry Langwith. The

regiment was composed as follows: Lt.-Col.—Robert Bridge. Major—Yorke Barrington. Captains—R. H. Brown, John Barrington, Henry W. Archibald, David B. Brown, Richard Partridge, Albert Corbett, Adj., Thomas Scott. 1st Lieuts.—Edward Robson, William Oram, jr., John E. Morrill, Daniel Graham. 2nd Lieuts.—Walter Young, Robert S. Bridge, Law Laffin, Laughlin McDonald, William Burke, Adj. A. Corbett, Capt., Surgeon—Thomas E. Jeans, M. D.



clamation was read to the Halifax regiments mustered that day on the Common, and was received with great enthusiasm and vociferous applause.

The call to duty was effective and the response prompt. The regular machinery for selecting the men for active service was too cumbersome; and instead of using the ballot a call was made for volunteers from the various regiments and an ample supply of men thus obtained. In Halifax a volunteer battalion was called out and remained on active service in the city until 14th April, when they were inspected and released from duty, the danger of immediate invasion having evidently passed; but a few weeks later, when the Imperial garrison was reduced by the despatch of H. M. 62nd regiment to New Brunswick, 150 men of the local forces were again ordered out and remained on duty until the end of July. In the surrounding counties about 4,000 men came forward for duty, of whom 2,700 were allotted to various specified points for defensive purposes. The Inspecting officer reported that "nothing could exceed the earnestness and spirit with which all classes came forward to meet the threatened attack. Day after day during the most unfavorable season of the year, men mustered and devoted themselves to drill. The best trained officers gave their services and drilled two or three squads a day, travelling from place to place without any remuneration. The proficiency obtained in manoeuvring under arms was most remarkable" and much more to similar effect. In the western part of the province we get less detail, but learn that the proclamation was cheerfully responded to by all ranks: whole regiments and volunteer companies offered their services. In Cape Breton and the eastern counties the same patriotic spirit was evinced.

Apart from the special work arising from the threatened invasion, substantial progress was made by the force during the year, stimulated naturally by the progress of the Fenian movement and the need of efficient defensive measures. Several new Foot regiments of militia were organized and 45,767 men were trained during the year, with a total enrollment (on paper),

of 58,031. It was in the artillery branch of the service, however, that the greatest measure of advancement was apparent. A special inspecting field officer, Lieut. Col. Hardy (Captain Royal Artillery), was put in charge in April, and the work and routine was assimilated as closely as possible to that of the R. A. Time does not permit me to give much detail: briefly it may be stated that there was a remarkable increase in strength both of gunners and guns. Three brigades, comprising 19 batteries and 1727 men, were established in and about Halifax alone: while companies or batteries were maintained at Pictou, Chester, Lunenburg, Liverpool, Yarmouth, Digby, Granville and Annapolis.

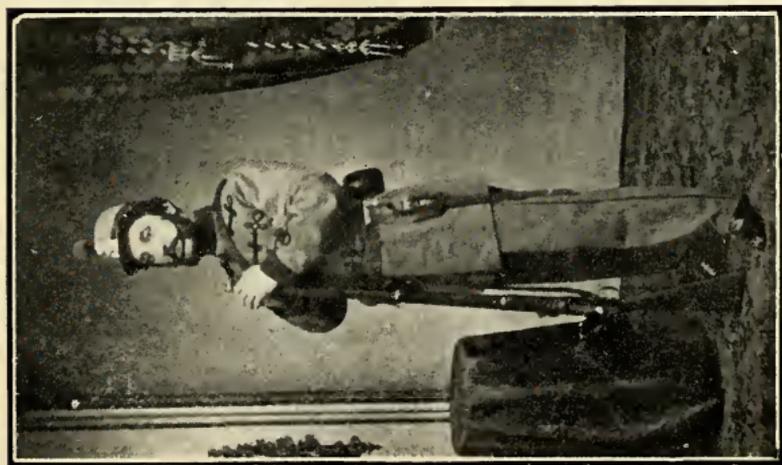
The volunteers showed a slight gain, a total of 779 as against 638 in 1865, yet it was evident that the substantial progress of the militia, due to radical improvements in the drill period, regulations, and supervision, practically absorbed the military strength and energy of the province. Outside of Halifax only five volunteer companies, with a total strength of 356 of all ranks, were returned as being efficient. These were Windsor, Tatamagouche, Shubenacadie, Shelburne, and Somerset.

The total military expenditure for the year was \$114,460, of which \$44,334 was due to the threatened Fenian invasion. The issue of arms, accoutrements, uniforms and stores was on a much more general and business-like scale than in previous years. Interest in musketry practice was carefully nursed and the number of competitors at the provincial rifle matches at Bedford again showed an encouraging increase. No less than 341 military officers were trained during the year under the permanent staff at head quarters. A Naval Brigade was organized under Lieut. Col. Wier, which, by the following spring, contained two companies comprising 554 men fully enrolled, and 16 other companies in process of organization. Two drill sheds for this brigade—one in Halifax and one at Liverpool—had been erected.

Militia legislation this year (1866), was of importance only as reflecting public sentiment regarding Fenians and Fenian-



**PRIVATE CLIFFORD R. KINNEAR,**  
Chebucto Greys Volunteer Rifle Company.  
(Undress uniform, with shell jacket and forage-cap,  
about 1862.)



**PRIVATE RICHARD LAWSON,**  
Chebucto Greys Volunteer Rifle Company.  
(Full dress uniform with Enfield Rifle, about  
1862.)



ism. One law provided for increased penalties for refusal or neglect to take the oath of allegiance, another gave power to any magistrate to summarily seize (under warrant), any arms or ammunition said to be for purposes hostile to the province: another dealt directly with treason and treasonable Acts: while a fourth made certain minor changes in the existing militia Act.

The following year, 1867, was one of special and unique interest to the people of this province. Political feeling ran high and absorbed general attention. The militia service was not wholly unaffected by this, and there was a strong feeling of unrest regarding the future: in some districts an erroneous idea was current that the militia law of the province had been suspended. In spite of these drawbacks, it is pleasing to note that good substantial work was done throughout 1867 on lines similar to those of 1866 and preceding years. 41,997 officers and men attended the annual training out of a nominal strength of 59,147. The various regiments were as a rule reported on satisfactorily: one in a remote part of Inverness county obtained special praise, while two in Antigonish, two in Kings and one in Guysboro received unsatisfactory mention. The Artillery branch remained in very good shape, although deprived of the service of its very efficient inspecting field officer, Lieut.-Col. Hardy, R. A., who returned to England during the summer. The volunteers fell away a little from the standard of 1866, the returns for 1867 showing a total of only 639 effectives.

A word here as to the question of armament may be of interest. As has probably been gathered from what has already been said, a great shortage of fire-arms for the force always existed; and while strong efforts had been made during recent years to remove this defect, many regiments were deplorably weak in this vital respect, and remained so until the end of the chapter. In the following year, when the force came under the Dominion government, the number of rifles available for the whole force of 50,000 men was only 17,160. This meant that in case of a sudden invasion or call to arms, two-

thirds of the whole defensive force of the province would have been useless for practical purposes until arms could be brought out from England.

The Naval Brigade had not made much progress this year owing to lack of qualified instructors; it subsequently, however, developed into a useful and efficient branch of the service.

Confederation of the B. N. A., provinces had by this time gone into effect and Nova Scotia's control of its citizen soldiery was practically at an end. This brings the provincial militia into a new regime; and its story as part of the Dominion's forces will no doubt, be told by some future historian.

In conclusion let me quote from Colonel (and Adjutant-General), Sinclair's report for 1867, a paragraph or two which gives an excellent summary of the progress attained:

"The annual five days' training of the whole force has now fully attained the object originally aimed at,—the complete organization of the whole force of men of martial age for administrative purposes, and giving them a tolerable idea of parade, discipline, and marching, while the more intelligent have gained an amount of military knowledge which would be useful if required.

"It affords me sincere pleasure to be able to report that nothing could exceed the willing and loyal spirit of the Militia of Nova Scotia during the five years they have been called on to render gratuitous services, which must have been heavily felt."

The Militia thus honorably closed its career as a provincial force with credit to its men, to their leaders, and to Nova Scotia.

**J. P. EDWARD,**

(Late Major 3rd Regt. V. R. C.)

---

#### DISCUSSION.

Senator William Ross, ex-minister of Militia, stated that the militia of Nova Scotia had been a credit to the Province.



The King's and Regimental Colours carried by the Halifax Regiment of Militia from 18— till 1869, and by its successor, the 66th Halifax Volunteers Battalion of Infantry, afterwards the 66th Regiment, Princess Louise Fusiliers, from 1869 till 1901. Deposited in St. Paul's Church, 13th September, 1903.





ADJUTANT-GENERAL COL. R. BLIGH SINCLAIR,  
(Late of 42nd and 21st Regiments.)



LT.-COLONEL JOHN BREMNER,  
(Captain 1st Co. Halifax Volunteer Artillery, 1805.)



It was composed of good officers and men interested in the work. The Senator claimed the honor of having brought in the Act establishing the Royal Military college at Kingston.

Senator Power said that Nova Scotia had led British America in training a militia, and that in his opinion the work of forming and training a militia in the earlier days had not been surpassed by the present methods.

Lt.-Colonel Bremner spoke of the self-sacrificing spirit of the officers and men in the early period of his life and of the splendid work accomplished, especially in Halifax. Sir Sandford Fleming had been a private in the ranks.

Lt.-Colonel F. H. Oxley spoke of his early experience in the Scottish rifles, membership in which qualified for a vote.

Lt.-Colonel John T. Wyle, who served in the naval brigade, gave interesting reminiscences of Halifax military life and spoke of the splendid service of the Guysboro militia.

Lt.-Colonel James E. Curran thought the paper had added much in the way of information on a very important subject.

Major H. E. Gates thought the paper was of such general interest that it should be published for the information of the militiamen of Nova Scotia.

Harry Piers, who knows the earlier period well, considered that Major Edwards had done great service to the Province in putting into permanent shape matter of such great importance.

Paymaster Annesley, a naval officer, thought the paper threw a flood of light on the growth of a great military movement which had profoundly affected the British empire.

Major Anderson, R. C. E., of the headquarters staff, a graduate of Kingston, spoke in appreciative terms of the paper.



## EXPLANATION OF FIGURES.

- Fig. 1** *Coatee of officer of 1st. Halifax Regiment of N. S. Militia, about 1830.* Made of dark blue cloth with red facings (collar and cuffs), and gilt lace (on collar, cuffs, and flaps of false pockets on skirts), buttons, skirt ornaments and epaulettes. White turn-backs to skirt, terminated by the skirt ornament, viz., the number "1" between thistles surmounted by crown. Buttons bear number "1" with a garter inscribed "Halifax Regiment of Militia," surmounted by crown. (Formerly in possession of late Nepean Clarke. Photographed by courtesy of Lt.-Col. Chipman, 66th P. L. F.).
- Fig. 2** *Gilt full-dress epaulettes of uniform shown in Fig. 1.*
- Fig. 3** *Shako plume of white feathers with gilt base. Belonging to uniform shown in Fig. 1.*
- Fig. 4** *Smooth-bore carbine with brass mountings; steel lock marked "V. R. Tower, 1844," and stock stamped with owner's name, "W. Lea." Length 36 inches. Said to have been used in 1st Company (Halifax) Volunteer Artillery. (H. Piers).*
- Fig. 5** *Light-infantry shako, 3rd Halifax Regiment of N. S. Militia, about 1835.* Made of black beaver-felt, with black leather peak and top, bronze plate and chin-strap (acanthus leaf design), bronze-colored pompon, and black cap-cords. The plate consists of a star, bearing a laurel wreath surrounding a Maltese cross, in the centre of which is a bugle with cord and the number "3" surrounded by a circle inscribed "Nova Scotia Militia;" the whole surmounted by a crown. (Property of Capt. Henry Heckler, 63rd Halifax Rifles).
- Fig. 6** *Shako of N. S. Militia, about 1868. (Regulation pattern).* Dark blue cloth, black leather peak, silver shako-plate, surmounted by crown, with gilt centre bearing mayflower design, inscribed "Nova Scotia Militia" on garter, and white and red pompon with silver base. (E. M. H. Vieth, 15th Regt. N. S. M.).
- Fig. 7** *Forage-cap of 15th Regiment of Nova Scotia Militia, about 1868.* Blue-black cloth, black leather peak, black oak-pattern band, and gilt-cord number. (E. M. H. Vieth). The other regiments wore, instead of the number, a silver-cord laurel wreath enclosing the monogram N. S. M. in script letters, surmounted by a crown.
- Fig. 8** *Belt buckle, gilt, worn by some officers of N. S. Militia, 1867. (H. Piers.).* Most officers wore the special silver buckle of the N. S. Militia shown in Fig. 13.
- Fig. 9** *Outer circle of belt buckle, bronze, of the Chebucto Greys, 1859-73. (G. Piers).* The centre of the buckle bore a crown.

- Fig. 10** *Shako-plate, rough bronze, of the Mayflower Rifles.* Maltese cross, bearing bugle with cords, surrounded by circlet inscribed "Mayflower Rifles," the whole surmounted by a crown. (Capt. H. Heckler.).
- Fig. 11** *Shako-plate, bronze, of the Chebucto Greys, 1865-73.* Escutcheon bearing arms of the Baronets of Nova Scotia, surmounted by scroll inscribed with the corps motto, "Pro aris et focus." Worn surmounted by a crown. (G. Piers). From 1859 to 1865 the plate was heraldically colored.
- Fig. 12** *Button, silver, of officer's tunic, N. S. Militia, 1868.* Mayflower design with crown above, surrounded by "Nova Scotia Militia." (E. M. H. Vieth).
- Fig. 13** *Belt buckle, officer's, silver, 1868.* Mayflower design (leaves badly formed), surmounted by crown, circle inscribed "Nova Scotia Militia." (E. M. H. Vieth.). Some belt buckles had hook ("snake") fastening.

## Uniforms of Officers of Line Regiments of the Nova Scotia Militia, 1863-1869.

The following detailed description of the militia officers' uniforms, prior to the force being taken over by the Dominion, is worth preservation.

### Full-dress Uniform.

*Tunic*: scarlet cloth; facings white cloth; silver lace, buttons and shoulder-cords; buttons, mayflower design with crown above, surrounded by "Nova Scotia Militia." *Shako*: dark blue cloth; plate, a silver star surmounted by a crown, the star bearing a gilt garter inscribed "Nova Scotia Militia" inclosing mayflower design; pompon, worsted, white above and red below, in silver socket; silver gorgon's-head ventilator at back of cap. *Badges of rank* (on collar): lt.-colonel, crown; major, star; captain, crown and star; lieutenant, crown; ensign or 2nd lieutenant, star. *Sword and spurs*: lt.-colonel and major, brass scabbard and brass spurs; adjutant, steel scabbard and steel spurs; other officers, black leather scabbard with gilt mountings; sword-knots, white leather or gold-worked. *Waist-belt*: white enamelled leather; belt-clasp, silver, mayflower design in centre, surmounted by crown, circle inscribed "Nova Scotia Militia." A hook clasp was also worn by some, as well as buckles which were not of the special Nova Scotia design. *Cross-belt and pouch*: belt (over left shoulder) white enamelled leather; pouch, black leather with silver crown and number of regiment. *Trousers*: black cloth with scarlet stripe. *Gloves*: white leather.

### Undress Uniform.

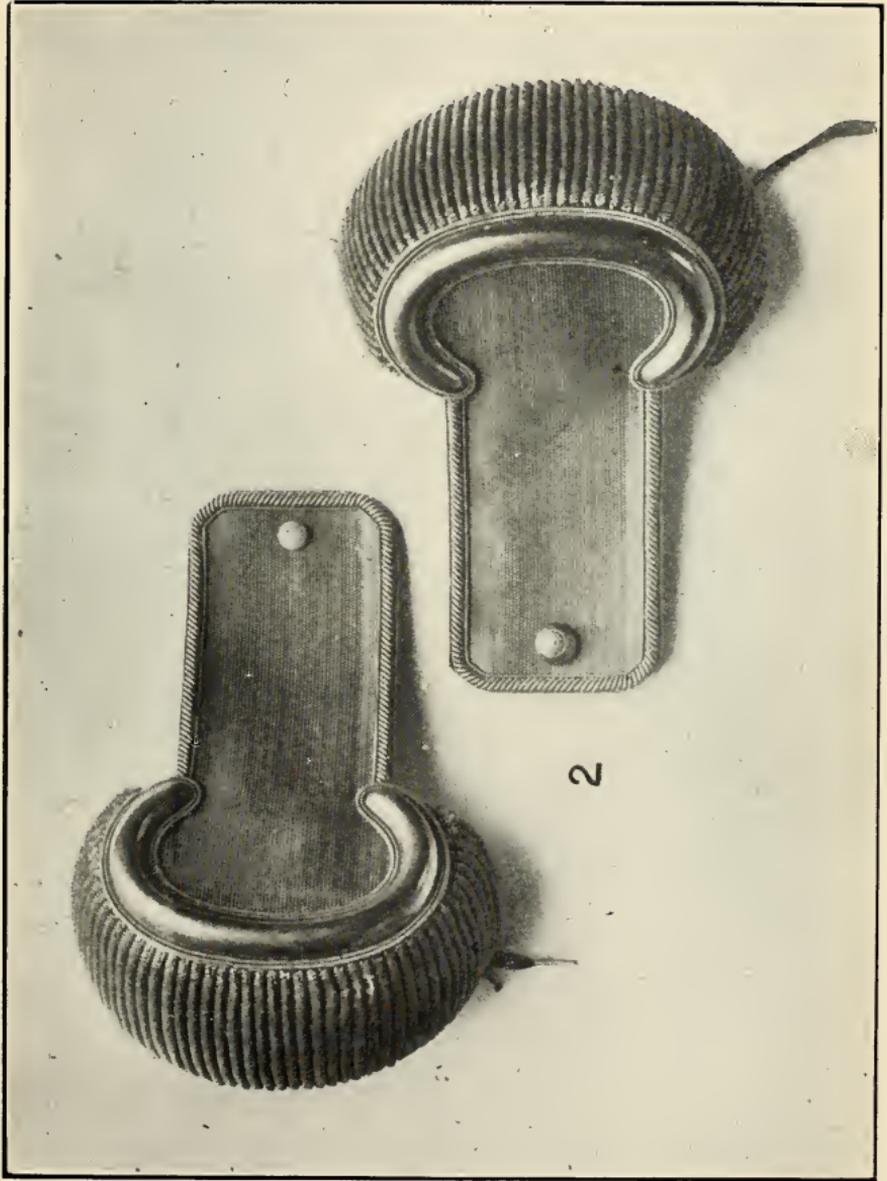
*Patrol jacket*: scarlet serge (no facings or lace); buttons, silver, same design as those on tunic; shoulder-cords of thick silver-cord, twisted. *Forage-cap*: blue-black cloth with black leather peak; black oak-pattern band and black button and looped braid design on top; badge a silver-cord laurel wreath, inclosing interlaced script monogram "N. S. M.", the whole surmounted by a crown. (The 15th Regiment had permission to wear the number of the corps instead of the above-described badge). *Sword and spurs*: as in full-dress. *Waist-belt*: worn under jacket. *Cross-belt and pouch*: as in full-dress. (Some cross-belts were of white buffed leather).

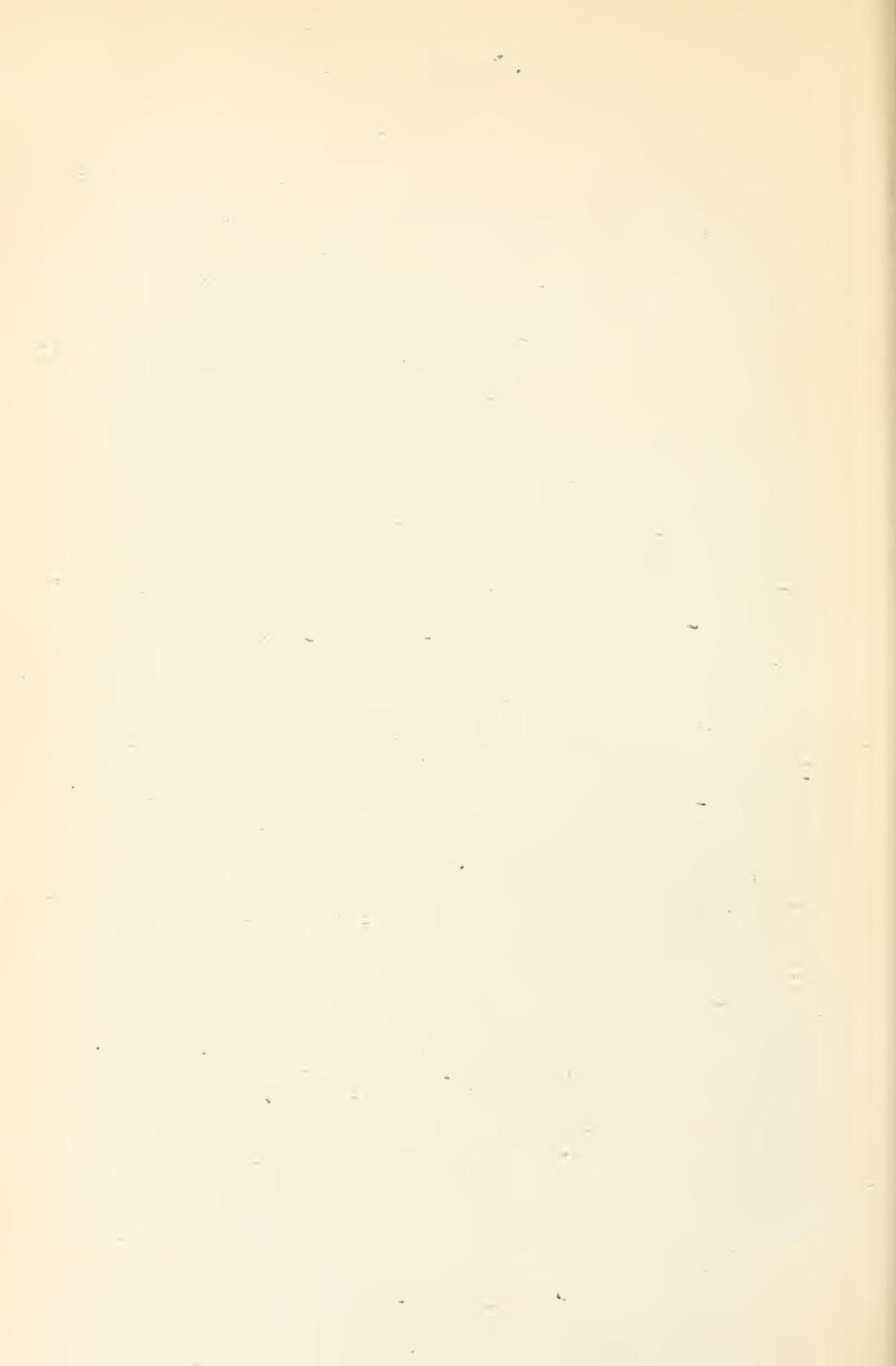
Artillery regiments wore dark blue tunics with red facings and a busby head-dress, and a few other very minor variations in uniform. Rifle regiments wore rifle-green with red facings and black belts.

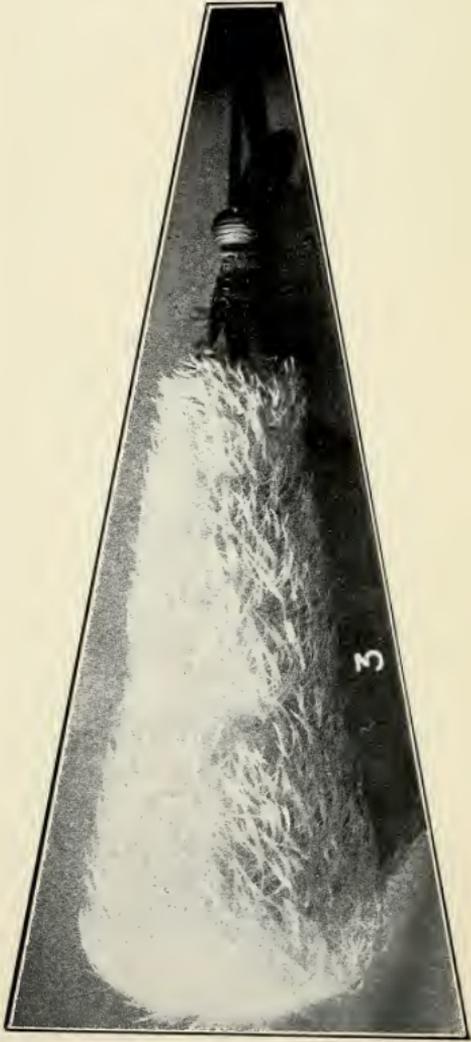
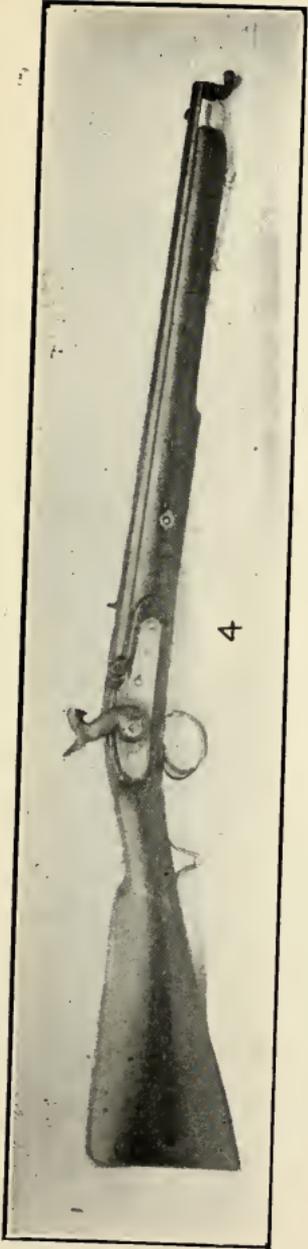
















6

7

5



## EARLY REMINISCENCES OF HALIFAX.

(First Paper).

By PETER LYNCH, Q. C.

Read before the Nova Scotia Historical Society, 1st March, 1883.

---

**Story of a Young Halifax Girl who became the Wife of an Indian.**

It was my good fortune in my youth, and during my ripe years, to come in contact with many persons acquainted with much of the early history of this our native city. Most of those persons have passed away. Some of their names are familiar to us through their descendants. Others, who played an active and important part in their day and generation are utterly unknown to our contemporaries, the only record of them is now to be found on rickety tomb-stones in the old Church-yard. Here let me say to all who have a taste for antiquarian lore (if we can apply that term to things of less than two centuries old), that an afternoon may be very pleasantly and profitably passed in that old cemetery, for on its tablets are to be found most interesting histories of some of the stirring events connected with the early history of the town.

I regret to say that I did not avail myself of the opportunities I once had of obtaining much valuable information on that subject, and I now look back to those opportunities lost and never to be regained with much but unavailing regret.

It is a great pity that the personal history of the early settlers of the town has to a large extent been lost, for many of them were people of a very superior order, both mentally and physically. Whether we have improved or degenerated is a question which we will not now discuss.

One old man who has recently been removed from us with whom I had frequent communication, and for whom I had much respect, had much of our urban lore, and had from time to time promised me some very interesting details of events connected with that pretty spot, the North West Arm, but his engagements and mine caused us to postpone the consideration of it, until the grim monarch interposed between us, and gave me another illustration of the danger of delay.

Another person whose family played a large and conspicuous part in the early history of the Province, the widow of a man formerly in authority, was one to whom I as a child, often listened for hours with wrapt attention. She had apparently an inexhaustible store of narratives of Indian and other atrocities, some of which are to be found on the pages of the history of the province, others only in the recollections of those living about the period. That old lady, an intimate friend of my mother, was in the habit of spending much time at our house. And after dinner with her high mob cap, her spectacles on her nose, her large signet ring on her thumb, a snuff box of about six inches diameter, in her hand, and a large red and yellow silk handkerchief spread on her lap, would amuse us for hours with stories of love, and wars, some of which she had traditionally, others of which had come under her own personal cognizance. From her, I obtained the particulars of the narrative of which I propose now to give you an outline. Names I will not, dates I cannot, give you.

From that old lady I learned, that amongst the earliest settlers in the town from England, came a merchant, a man of respectable lineage, good education, and much intelligence. Rumor whispered, that some unsuccessful speculations at home had resulted in commercial embarrassment, and induced him to come to the new world, in the hope of retrieving his fortunes. He was a reticent, unobtrusive man, and all who had anything to do with him soon learned to

respect him, for his kindly disposition, and unswerving integrity. His family, was but a small one, consisting of his sister, an aged spinster, who, since the decease of his wife, had presided over his household, and an only child, a fair girl of some seventeen summers, his domestics and his clerks, all of whom dwelt beneath his roof, for in those primitive days, hotels and boarding houses were scarce, as to numbers, and scanty as to resources.

At the time to which we refer, there was much distrust and hostility between the red man and the white. The Indian regarded the settlers as intruders upon their grounds, and despoilers of their possessions, while on the other hand a recent attack by the Indians upon the little settlement at Dartmouth, which resulted in the death of several of the whites, and much wanton cruelty, together with the scalping of two persons, who had incautiously wandered beyond the narrow precincts of the town, had engendered much fear and distrust, on the part of the settlers. Notwithstanding, however, the bad feeling thus existing between the races, fortuitous circumstances, at times, had brought them into contact, and now and then Indian men and women in their picturesque costumes, were to be seen in the streets. Amongst others a tall, graceful lad, who had been for some time an invalid, and whose disease had baffled the skill of the Indian Medicine Man, had ventured into the settlement to seek the aid of one of the resident Doctors, and while hanging about the town, had attracted the attention of the merchant. His good looks, and fine manly, graceful bearing, but above all, his sunken eye, hollow cheek, and evident debility had enlisted the sympathy of the kind-hearted man, who from time to time asked him to his house, and fed him at his board, and as the lad's intelligence, and apparent honesty, gradually won his confidence, he, as he grew in strength under the skillful treatment of the Physician, grew in favor with the merchant, until in an evil hour, with the concurrence of his household he determined to take him into his employ, and make

him one of his family. Clad in the habiliments of the white man, and brought into daily contact with him, the austerity of the savage appeared to be yielding to the ameliorating influences of his new friends, and in a short time he became useful to his benefactor, and discharged his duties with diligence and apparent cheerfulness. He was an orphan, and all intercourse with those of his own race appeared to have been broken off. At intervals, with the concurrence of his master, he would, with his gun on his shoulder, stroll away into the neighboring woods, and after a time return with the products of his day's sport. At first those excursions were limited to a few hours, but after a while they became more protracted, and at last, to the displeasure of the merchant and notwithstanding frequent remonstrances, he would disappear, and remain away for whole days.

The nomadic habits of his people sown in his blood, and for a time become dormant by the novelty of his situation, and the kindness of his benefactor, were fast developing themselves in many unmistakable ways. The duties assigned to him, never of a very onerous character, and which had been discharged with apparent cheerfulness and alacrity, were evidently sitting heavily upon him, and were frequently discharged with too apparent reluctance; and the merchant, was beginning to despair of ever moulding his protégé to his ways, when of a sudden to the surprise of every one except the maiden, the Indian's restlessness was no longer manifested, and again, to the satisfaction of his master, his duties were resumed with cheerfulness, and the cloud which had rested upon his brow, was entirely dispelled. Some of the young people who had wandered about the precincts of the town had recently remarked that they had seen the Indian lad holding converse with others of his race, while neighbors had spoken to one another in whispers, of an apparent intimacy between him and the maiden. To the confiding merchant no breath of suspicion had been communicated. Confident as to the prudence of his child, and having no

doubts as to the conduct of the lad, he had never entertained a thought to the detriment of either of them. Prudent men believed that it would be a thankless communication for them to make, and it was such a secret as no true woman would ever think of divulging. At length a flagrant act of indiscretion caused the terrible truth to flash across the mind of the father, and in a stormy interview with his daughter, she had avowed her love for the Indian boy, and her determination to become his wife. Need I say that the revelation was received with indignation and horror by the agonized parent. The lad was at once thrust out of the house and the silly and infatuated girl placed under the most rigid surveillance. But love laughs at locksmiths. The Indian at once disappeared from the town. The girl who had lived for a time in apparent hopeless grief, became calmed. The neighbours and friends after a little while, ceased to discuss the affair, having probably obtained some new piece of gossip, and the father's suspicions and fears having become abated, his household in a short time resumed its pristine condition, and his daughter was again allowed to come and go as she chose. Again, after a while, neighbors whispered to one another, their suspicions regarding the lovers. Some told that the Indian had been seen hovering about the brushwood fence, while one old gossip went so far as to affirm that she had seen the lad and the maiden under the shade of night in close converse near to her father's dwelling, and so things went on, until the maple and the ash having been denuded of their summer tints, were decking the surrounding woods with crimson and gold, when one bright, but dark night, about midnight those in the vicinity of the merchant's house were aroused by the frantic cries of his family, that his daughter had just fled with the Indian. As the neighbours came forth from their dwellings, they found the merchant in a state apparently bordering on madness, rushing from his house, followed by two men servants, and calling loudly to all around him to aid him in the pursuit of his daughter, promising a large reward to any one who would either secure the girl

or shoot the Indian. The wretched, infatuated girl had but just effected her escape, when her father became aware of her flight, and he, seizing a loaded gun, with which weapon every house was then provided, and calling to his men to similarly arm themselves, and follow him, the distracted father rushed from his dwelling. A tramp, who had been wandering about the streets, while others slept, in answer to an ejaculation from him informed him, that a man and woman evidently in flight, had passed him as on their way towards the brow of the hill. Onward sped the pursuers, and as they passed the pallisade, one of the men asserted that he caught a glimpse of the fugitives, between him and the horizon as they gained the top of the hill.

In the meantime the flying pair had made their way with all possible expedition up the steep ascent, but after a time the strength of the trembling girl began to fail her and out of breath and nearly fainting with fatigue her steps began to totter as they neared the summit. The Indian, better used to the pace and more accustomed to the high and tortuous way threw his arm around her and although their progress became but slow, they at last reached the brow of the hill, just as the nearing cry of the pursuers broke upon their affrighted ears. The way down the further side of the hill was much easier, and again with the aid of her companion the poor misguided girl was hurried down toward the plain now known as the common. Again the nearing steps of the pursuers were heard in rapid pursuit and the loud cries of the distracted parent reached the ears of his child as she and her companion reached a turbid stream, which then flowed along the valley, now a portion of the common. The Indian familiar with the ground, had come to a place where a dead log spanned the stream, across which in his arms he successfully bore his companion. No sooner had they reached the further side of the stream than putting down his burden, he with a herculean effort, toppled the rude bridge into the stream, and thus for the time stopped the progress of the pursuers. Again raising his companion, now about

helpless, he made his way up the side of the rising ground, now known as Camp Hill, and with desperate energy partly carrying and partly dragging the wretched girl, he made his way slowly along. The party in pursuit, stayed for a time, had after some little delay managed to cross the stream, and as the Indian and his victim after straining the top of the hill made their way down the decline, the cry of rage and despair again reached their ears. At last the light of the stars glinting upon the black waters of the Arm, seen by the quick eye of the nearly exhausted Indian, told him that safety was at hand. As he approached the shore, a short guttural ejaculation escaped him, a preconcerted signal to some confederates of his tribe, but as he stood on the beach and anxiously peered around, no voice responded to the signal, no canoe was to be seen at the trysting place. An involuntary cry of dismay burst from him, as he heard his pursuers near at hand. But the cry was heard by his friends and also by his pursuers. His friends having despaired of his advent, the time named for his return having long lapsed, had just shot out into the stream, but at once returned. The pursuers, uncertain for a minute as to the spot whither the quarry had fled, guided by the cry, made with all speed towards it, satisfied as they discerned the objects of their search just below them, that they must now fall into their hands. A cry of impatient rage escaped the Indian as he saw his pursuers within a few yards of him, and as the canoe grounded upon the sand, the panting girl was almost thrown into it, and her companion with the eagerly outstretched hand of one of his merchant's servants almost upon his arm, with a bound just escaped his grasp. With the rapidity of lightning, the outstretched hand of the servant having missed its object, seized hold of the bow of the canoe and held it with an iron grasp. The Indian in the bow finding that the canoe did not yield to the pressure of his paddle, as he in vain strove to shove off from the shore, having discovered the resisting influence, at once lifting his paddle high above his head, brought it down upon the hand of the man with such violence that it thoroughly disabled him and caused him to relax his grasp, and as the mer-

chant came to the spot the canoe no longer restrained bounded into the dark waters, and the wretched parent, utterly defeated, stood helpless upon the margin of the stream. A musket was at once raised by one of his men and pointed towards the retreating party, but the fears of the parent for the safety of his child rose superior to all other considerations, and the boat sped into the darkness.

As no means of pursuit was at hand all further attempts would for the time have been useless. As the canoe reached the further side of the arm, a torch flashed its crimson stream of light across the black waters, but an ejaculation from the Indian caused it to be instantly extinguished, and the canoe glided into the little cove formed by the strip of land now known as Melville Island, and as it grounded upon the beach in silence and darkness, a blacker darkness fell as a pall upon the crushed spirit of the poor old man.

As the first rays of coming light pencilled the eastern sky the next morning, a large party of the townpeople accompanied him to the spot where the retreating party had disappeared, but no trace of them was to be found, and the poor old man, after wandering for a time amid the pathless depths of the forest, bowed nearly to the ground, with tottering steps made his way back to his desolate home, in a state of mind bordering upon madness.

From that time forth all enquiry as to the whereabouts of the fugitives was vain. They had made their way into the depths of the pathless forest, and all further attempts to search for them would not only have proved abortive, but have been attended with much hazard.

The terrible affair having been the one theme of the little community for a short time, was as such events usually are but a nine days wonder, and was soon all but forgotten to all but the disconsolate parent, who from that time forth wandered about the town scarcely bestowing any attention upon

his business, and avoiding as much as possible all intercourse with his neighbors, a poor, disconsolate, broken down man.

About a year from the time of the flight on a dark cheerless night, in a thick wood near the bank of the Shubenacadie, by the flickering and weird light of some half burnt fagots, and enveloped by the smoke of a wig-wam, the low cry of a newly born infant had scarcely broken upon the stillness of the night, when to it was succeeded the wail of a young but emaciated woman, whose dying cry told the closing lament of a wretched life, and the soul of the child of the English Merchant, released from its mortal tenement, thus made expiation to the world for its outrage upon human society. The unfortunate broken hearted young woman after a long year of mourning, lamentation, and tears, having outraged the terms upon which length of days had been vouchsafed to her, had departed from—to her a world of misery, in the hope of finding a refuge, where the wicked cease from troubling and the weary are at rest.

Again a few weeks after the happening of the sad event, just narrated, a tall, gaunt Indian under the shadow of night, stealthily made his way into the town, approached the house of the merchant, and having deposited an infant carefully wrapped in a course blanket, in the porch, and rapped violently at the door, fled out into the darkness, without having been discovered by anyone. A few moments after, the child was brought into the room, where the old man sat listless and sad. It was placed upon his lap. As he looked upon the swarthy face of the slumbering infant, the whole of the terrible facts connected with it, swept across the chords of his heart with a melancholy wail. For a moment he seemed as if almost petrified, and as if about to repel the little slumbering thing, but the next, he bent over it gathered it, into his bosom, and baptized it with his tears.

The rest of the story is soon told. The child became the solace of her grandfather's declining years. As she grew up

to womanhood, she won the love of all about her by her gentleness and singular beauty. Traces of her Indian blood were to be discovered in her brunette complexion, her dark and beautiful eyes, and her graceful bearing. To her friends, she was the bright and cheerful companion, to her grandfather, the comfort of his life. Never tiring in her efforts to make his home a happy one, all minor considerations were forgotten, and laid aside, in her ceaseless effort for his happiness. Beloved by the rich and the poor, she was sought in marriage at an early age by a British Naval Officer, then in command of a ship on this station. She gave him her heart, but not her hand, until it had closed the eyes of her grandfather. Then amidst the blessings of the community, she became the wife of a husband well worthy of her, and made her home in England, where she became the mother of a large family of children, one of whom was within the recollection of those living on this station, holding the same rank in the navy that his father had at the time of his marriage.

From the time he laid down his burden at the merchant's door, nothing was ever heard of the Indian.

---

### **The Three Fishermen.** (Second Paper.)

The occurrence which I now propose to narrate is one that I had from Mr. William Story, formerly a merchant of Halifax. Particulars as to names and dates I cannot give you. He told it to me when I was a boy, about half a century ago, and said he had a distinct recollection of it. I think, therefore, that its authority can be relied on. He was a very old man, somewhere between 80 and 90 years of age, and from the best calculation I can make I should think it occurred about 100 to 110 years ago. The narrative is as follows:—

At the time of which I speak the fishermen then resident on the western side of the Harbour had had a very disastrous season. The fish had apparently deserted the coast and

seines were set and lines cast into the sea in vain. The fishermen, as improvident then as they are now, and I fear ever will be, were dependent upon each year's fish for each year's bread, and it mattered not how prosperous a season they may have had, they lived up to all they got, year by year, and not having a Joseph amongst them to suggest provision for years of famine, when such years came, they were ever found to be in a state of semi-starvation.

The year to which I now refer had been one of utter failure, and when at last the month of November had passed and not a fish's tail was to be found on the stages, and starvation was to be too surely apprehended in the not very remote distance, the fishermen began to ask each other, what was to be done. A previous year of comparative failure had left debts unpaid, and credit was therefore exhausted. Some scanty supplies already grudgingly given, had been consumed, and further applications had been unheeded. At last three men, residents I think of Herring Cove, each the father of a large family, finding that all other sources of supply were dried up, determined to try the last expedient of famishing people, and go to Halifax, and endeavor to get something by begging. It was a most revolting thing for them to do, but poverty and degradation of spirit don't always go hand in hand, and what won't men do for starving wives and children. They were strong able men, willing to work, but employment there was none, at that season of the year, and they had therefore no other expedient. So, one bitterly cold day in the middle of December, amidst float ice, they rowed themselves up to town, and set about their painful work, but cold as was the wind, the hearts of the towns-people seemed colder. They went from house to house, and from shop to shop, in vain. Those they owed money to, told them they had already given them more than they could afford. Many twitted them as to their respectable appearance, and evident health and strength, apparently accounting it a reproach that they should look either healthy or respectable; others taunted them with the

enquiry, why they did not work rather than beg, when at the same time they knew no work could be had. And so it was that in despair, and almost broken hearted, they wandered from door to door, amidst frowns and repulses, their pockets empty of money, and their wallets of food, until the declining sun warned them that they had spent their day in vain. Then maddened with despair, they determined to make their way back to their starving families, dreading to meet their anxious looks, and unwilling to acquaint them of their fruitless attempt. Just then, in passing a shop, where they had been sternly refused assistance, they unfortunately saw some clothing hanging beside the door, near at hand. Swinging in the wind, were three coarse shop waistcoats, and scarcely knowing what he did, one of the three men with the cognizance of the others, took the waistcoats from the string which held them, and thrust them into the pocket of his pea-jacket. Onward they went, scarcely daring to speak to each other as to what they had done, each man's conscience beating violently against his breast, and feeling as though they would like to flee, though no one was pursuing them. At last the man who had taken the waistcoats stopped suddenly, and said, "Men we have done wrong, I am sorry I took these things, and I cannot keep them, if I and my family are to starve, we must starve honestly; and so said they all, and determined at once to take back the stolen property, restore it to the owner of it, and express their regret for having taken it. At once they went back to the shop, and arrived there just as the trader had missed the waistcoats, and with loud imprecations was prepared to go in quest of the thief. With the waistcoats in his hand, the man who had taken them, together with his comrades, entered the shop, and as he laid them on the counter, he expressed his deep regret that maddened by his necessities, and in his extremity, scarcely knowing what he was about, he had taken the property, but, that his conscience would not allow him to retain it, and that they had all come back to restore it, and express their sorrow, that they should have allowed themselves to be guilty

of the act. The shop-keeper, who appeared to be in a towering passion, was just beginning to storm about his lost property, at once with the look of a tiger, turned his wrath upon them, and abused them for a pack of thieves, and vagabonds; but the next moment, having whispered something to his clerk, who at once left the shop, he changed his tone, expressed himself as satisfied as they had returned the goods, and kept them in conversation for some short time, until his clerk returned with a constable, who at once apprehended them as thieves, and told them that they must accompany him to prison. The poor fellows, thunderstruck, and pallid with fear, pleaded earnestly for forgiveness, stated the terribly trying circumstances, under which they had taken the goods, and supplicated the trader, and the constable to let them go, but it was all in vain. The trader for a moment, amidst their sobbings and tears and cries for mercy, seemed to relent, but the constable, not to be deprived of his prey, told the informer, that the men were now beyond his aid, and that if he interfered, he would be imprisoned for felony and subject to prosecution, and so the poor unfortunate fishermen, were dragged along through snow and ice to the gaol; and cold, and hungry, and almost heart-broken, thrust into a dungeon, until the morning. They were taken before a Magistrate, at the Police Office, and as their guilt was beyond question, they were, on the evidence of the trader, committed to prison, there to abide their trial at the next term of the Supreme Court.

In the meantime, as night drew on, the wives, with anxious faces, and trembling hearts, made their way to their doors, as every sound indicated approaching footsteps, hoping to be able to provide their half-fed children with a sufficient meal, before retiring to rest. But hour succeeded hour, and at last, the three wives, with anxious faces, met and wondered why their husbands tarried so long. Hope suggested that they had been so successful, that they had been unable to get the products of their day's efforts home, before the night

overtook them, and so, nervous and disappointed, they retired to their sleepless beds, to hope and fear during the long tedious hours of the night, and anxiously look for the morrow. The next day passed in a state of fear and anxiety, which can be better conceived than expressed, and when night again closed in upon them, and no tidings came of the absent men, their wives, after an anxious conference, parted in a state of feverish excitement, almost bordering upon madness. Hope deferred, had made their hearts sick. Long ere the light of the next day dawned, one of them (by concert with the others), unable further to endure the state of suspense, was up, and upon the road to town. During the night before, there had been a heavy fall of rain, and through deep snow, and along the untrodden roads, she toiled her way around the head of the North West Arm, and arrived at an early hour in town. Having made her way to the abode of an old friend, whose house was open to her husband, herself and children, she anxiously enquired for her husband, but was told by her friend, that she had neither seen him nor heard of him. Beginning to fear disaster, she then made her way to his merchant, who informed her that he had seen her husband two days before with the other two men, but could give her no further tidings of him, nor did he tell her of their repulse, by him and his friends. At last in a condition of feverish anxiety and apprehension, she was informed in reply to further enquiry, that three fishermen from the shore who made pretence for help, had been detected in robbing a shop, and had been apprehended for theft, and were then confined in gaol. With trembling steps, and a terribly foreboding heart, she at once went to the gaol, and on enquiry found that her husband, together with his two hopeless friends, were there incarcerated as thieves. Who could depict the state of mind in which she for a long time in vain attempted to get access to the criminals, but at length, through the intercessions of a benevolent gentleman, who heard her sad story, and saw her distressed condition, she was permitted to hold intercourse with her wretched husband through the grated open-

ing in the door of his dungeon, and learned the sad and awful truth from him. I shall not venture to attempt a description of the interview, or of the wild and hopeless state in which that poor woman made her way home, to communicate to the others the awful story. God grant that none of us may ever have such a burden to struggle under.

By the ancient Saxon laws, as says that eminent authority Blackstone, the stealing of "property to the value of twelve pence was punishable by death, but the thief could redeem his life by payment of a pecuniary ransom; but by the statute of Henry the First, the form of redemption was taken away, and all persons guilty of larceny above the value of a shilling were doomed to be hanged."

By a Saxon law, enacted as far back as the time of King Athelstane, the stealing of property of the value of twelve pence, was made a capital offence, and punishable with death. Strange to say, that Draconian edict continued as a foul blot upon the statute book of our country, until a very recent period. To be sure the finger of God had inscribed upon a stone the edict, "Thou shalt not steal" but that same deity had afterwards lovingly inscribed upon the fleshly tablets of the heart, "If thy brother trespass against thee seven times, and seven times repent, thou shalt forgive him." But the three fishermen were to be tried by the laws of man. By the grand jury of the county when the court met, on the separate testimony of the shopkeeper, a true bill for theft was found against the men, and a few days after manacled, they were placed in the criminal dock, and the indictment accusing them of having feloniously stolen three waistcoats of the value of fifteen shillings, having been read to them, they were asked if they were guilty or not guilty. Dumb-founded and confused for awhile, they gazed at the officers of the Court in speechless terror, but as he again peremptorily, and in a loud voice, demanded of them whether they were guilty or not guilty, they with trembling voices said, "Guilty sir, but we are very sorry." The naive response thus

in their simplicity given, was received with an audible titter by the bye-standers, and as they thus confessed their guilt although cautioned by the court as to their answer, there was no need for further investigations. In a short time they were ordered to stand up while the Judge, totally ignorant of any palliating circumstances, told them of the heinousness of their offence, intimated that he had no doubt that they had committed the act through the instigation of the devil, and added that the laws of the land for the protection of society, imperatively required that all such miscreants, enemies of the law, and all good order, should be dealt with according to its requirements, and drawing the black cap over his brow, he proceeded to inform them that upon a day named, they should be taken from their place of confinement to the place of execution, and there hanged by the neck until they were dead, and wound up the merciful sentence, by expressing the usual hope that the Lord would have mercy on their souls. I will not continue to harrow your feelings by giving you the further details of the dreadful story, except to intimate that at the appointed time those three wretched, unfortunate men, were *actually hung*, and the cruel laws of cruel men thus exploited.

Of their wives and families, I can tell you nothing. The narrator of the story, had either never heard or forgotten their fate. But what brooked it, it was but the story of three poor fishermen and their families. The wave of time soon swept over an event so trivial, and obliterated it from the memory. The retaining a recollection of a thing so mean, was entirely unworthy of the consideration of the world, and beneath the dignity of history. A wise man was David when he said to God, "Let me fall into the hands of the Lord and not into the hands of man."

---

### Lieutenant Thomas.

I now propose to tell you of a very sad event which occurred on or about the 17th of August, 1797, and which caused deep sorrow to the whole community. I refer to the death of

Charles Thomas, Esquire, a lieutenant of the 7th Fusiliers then stationed in this garrison.

His Royal Highness Edward Duke of Kent, then I believe Prince Edward, the father of our Beloved Queen, God bless her, had been sent to America about the year 1795, and was at the time of which I am about to narrate, General and Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's forces in British North America. His Town residence, was the large building, standing on the east slope of the Citadel Hill for the last century, until very latterly used as a Military Hospital. His Country residence was on the west shore of Bedford Basin, and a property belonging to Sir John Wentworth, then Lieutenant-Governor of the province. There the Prince spent the larger portion of his time, summer and winter, and lived there in Royal Style. The Rotunda from which the Band of his Regiment discoursed sweet music, is still to be seen in a ruined condition. His house, stables, and other buildings, all of wood, have long succumbed to that unstable enemy, time. I remember when a little boy having been in the house, then tottering to its fall, the only furniture then in it, being the remains of a large pier glass, and some faded and tattered hangings. Besides that building, the only other one, was a small house which stood on the margin of The Fish Pond, which at the time I saw it was doorless and windowless, through which the wind swept with a low moan which sounded as a requiem, telling of its coming downfall. The Prince was a good soldier, but a great martinet, had violent likes and dislikes, and was of a very impulsive temperament. He prided himself very much upon His Regiment, and knew the Christian name of every soldier, although the Corps was then 1000 strong. Amongst his officers were four Nova Scotians. The late Sir Brenton Haliburton, that excellent man and upright and able Judge, so long the head of our judiciary; Wentworth Tongue a near relative of Cottenham Tongue and a leading politician of our Province, John Weeks and Charles Thomas, the subject of our consideration. By the Almanac of 179 (?) it appears that all three gentlemen

were at that time Lieutenants in the 7th Royal Fusiliers, the Prince's own regiment.

Charles Thomas was the son of Nathaniel Ray Thomas, and uncle of a lady remembered by many who now hear me, as one of the loveliest and gentlest of Nova Scotia's daughters, the deceased wife of Mr. Justice Wilkins, to whom I am indebted for some of the material which I have woven into this narrative. Mr. Thomas is said to have been a singularly handsome man, and being blessed with great suavity of manner, was a great favorite not only with his brother officers, but also with all who knew him. His Grandfather William Thomas, was one of the Founders of the New Plymouth Colony, and lived and died at Marshfield, Massachusetts. His father was one of the loyalists, who at the time of the separation of the United States from the Mother Country, left his home, which was at once confiscated, and after much privation and suffering, he made his way with the other Loyalists to this province, and with his family settled at Windsor, where he died some time about the close of The Revolutionary War. The Prince, attracted in all probability, by a sense of the losses sustained by the family, by their adherence to their King and Country, gave young Thomas a Commission in his own regiment, and in a short time, the kindly qualities of the young soldier made the same impression upon his Colonel that it had done upon every one else. He became the Prince's greatest favorite, received many distinguished marks of his approbation, and it was generally believed that the Prince, who as I before said was a fast friend, would have advanced him in his profession with all possible rapidity. Sir Brenton (then Mr.), Haliburton also a favorite with the Prince, and from whom I got much valuable information, when preparing some years ago a lecture upon The Queen, on that occasion told me, that as he and Mr. Thomas were one day in August, 1797, walking together along Barrington Street, in the vicinity of the house of the late Bishop Inglis, the Prince, accompanied by Colonel Wetherall, then Deputy Adjutant General, met them, and said "Thomas your brother officer

Robinson is in orders to go in pursuit of a deserter and has expressed a wish that you should accompany him, to which I assent. He is under orders to proceed immediately." That was of course received as an order, and in a few moments the two young men who had been great friends, parted for the last time, Thomas to make his hasty arrangements to accompany Mr. Robinson in pursuit of the deserter. Having heard that a soldier had been seen in the woods near the Margaret's Bay road they, accompanied by two privates, proceeded with all speed in that direction, and in a short time overtook and captured him. As he was reported to be a desperate character, and they were not aware whether or not he was armed, Robinson as they approached him cocked one of his pistols, but he had no necessity to use it, as the soldier at once when they drew near to him surrendered without a struggle. Having accomplished their business, and deported their prisoner to town, their next object was to search for the nearest hostelry in order to get their dinner. The only Inn then upon that road was kept by a man named Hamlam and thither the two young officers, tired and hungry, repaired. Elated with their success, and looking forward with pleasurable anticipations to their coming repast, the savoury fumes of which were making their way into the little room where they were, only too perceptibly, they had thrown themselves upon a little bedstead, a not unusual article of furniture in those days in the parlours of country Inns, and were enjoying themselves with the gossip of the day, interspersed with snatches of song, when Thomas remarked "Had you not better look to your pistols and see that they are all right." As he said so Robinson took up one of them to examine it, when it is supposed, that as he lifted it up, that the trigger must have come in contact with a portion of the bed clothes, for it went off, and having been loaded with a ball cartridge, the ball entered Thomas' breast and he fell back upon the bed mortally wounded. His companion horrified as may be imagined, at the terrible accident, as soon as he recovered from the shock, had his wounded friend with all care removed to Government House, then presided over by his kinsman Sir John Wentworth, where the

best medical aid was at once summoned, in the hope of saving his life, but alas it was all in vain, and he soon after with much suffering expired. Immediately after the accident, a messenger was dispatched to his mother, then resident at Windsor, with the terrible tidings, but at that time all communication with the interior of the Province was very slow, and she never saw him in life. When conscious that he was dying he expressed an earnest desire to see her, and repeatedly asked if she was coming, but he was dead before the messenger reached Windsor.

The Prince who had learned of the successful capture of the deserter, and had ridden out to congratulate the returning party, met the mournful cavalcade at the head of the Arm, and was so shocked at the terrible event, that stern soldier as he was, it is said he shed tears over the dying youth.

The sad news spread with the rapidity with which all bad tidings fly, and the whole community was suffused with grief, for one who was said to have many friends, and not a single enemy. I may here add, that after the said occurrence, His Royal Highness spontaneously bestowed upon the brother of the deceased officer a commission in the same regiment, where he served for many years, and afterwards retired from it with his half pay, which he continued to enjoy until the time of his death.

The burial of the young soldier, conducted with all the pomp and ceremony of a military funeral, was attended by all classes in the community, and was said to have been the largest procession of the kind ever seen in Halifax. The Prince walked at it as Chief Mourner, and showed deep emotion at the grave. Shortly afterwards, he caused to be erected at his own expense, a monumental stone in the old grave yard, where it is still to be seen bearing this inscription.

**This stone sacred to the memory of  
LIEUT. CHARLES THOMAS,  
of His Majesty's Royal Fusilier Regiment,  
who departed this life on the 16th August, 1797,  
Aged 24 years:  
is placed as a testimony of High Friendship and Esteem by  
Lieut.-General His Royal Highness  
PRINCE EDWARD, his Colonel.**

His old friend and comrade Sir Brenton, a half century after the recurrence of the sad event and then an octogenarian, in a sweet little poem entitled "Reflections" thus refers to the event:

"Daughter of Edward, such the warm desire  
 "Of one who knew and loved thy Royal Sire,  
 "What tho' his martial discipline was stern  
 "Himself submitted to each rule in turn;  
 "But when from his stern duties he sought rest  
 "No kinder heart e'er beat in human breast.  
 "No tale of woe was poured in Edward's ear  
 "But found a ready listener there.  
 "Witness when down his manly cheek, the tear  
 "Flowed freely, Thomas, on thy mournful bier."

I was surprised on searching The Gazette of the period to find that it contained no further mention of the event than the following obituary notice in the paper of the 22nd August;

"Last Thursday afternoon at The Government House Lieutenant Charles Thomas of His Majesty's 7th Regiment of Royal Fusiliers, Cousin of His Excellency Sir John and Lady Wentworth, in the 25th year of his age. The zeal and talent he evinced in the service of his profession promised future usefulness in the Service to which he was attached, and the uniform, amiable character he supported in private life, justly endeared him to his numerous friends, who with heartfelt sincerity lament his loss. Saturday his remains were interred with military honors."

I shall close this melancholy story with a letter of Lady Wentworth to his brother, dated

Government House, August 23rd, 1797.

My Dear Cousin,

I have this moment finished a letter to my dear and beloved aunt, after various attempts which the melancholy of my own heart led to a production which would increase that of

her own. I have torn and destroyed several of this sorrowful complexion, and still fear, this I have closed, is, still a portrait of private grief. But what can be expected from the pen of either of this family, but descriptive misery and never ceasing tears. Our dear own lost boy, the child of our care, the ornament of our house. Oh! Mr. Thomas we loved your departed brother, his sweet virtues gladdened our ambition in and for him—the darling of his family, the favorite of his prince, and so lost to us all. Indeed I feel for you—His death must be sore to your feelings, but his mother, his dear mother, his anxiety rested there as I lay by him, he painfully named his mother in dying accents “My mother what will she do” “My poor dear mother.” And then, “poor old lady it will be too much for her,” I calmed him, by saying she would soon be in town, he smiled, then talked of being too late, and too much for her, wished for his sister, who soon was by him. He knew her, and kissed her affectionately, but soon wandered, and too soon left us for ever. What consolation my dear cousin can be derived from the knowledge, how much our dear Charles was respected by all who knew him, we ought to receive as an alleviation to our misery. But it is too early to look for comfort anywhere. I search for his society in vain, it is lost to me. I saw him constantly, no day scarce passed but he was at our meals. I never met him but with pleasure, he never offended in any instance of his life. I looked high for his advancement. I made him a friend, and he bowed him down by his amiable conduct. The slightest appearance of ill health alarmed me for his sake I noticed every breath he drew to \* \* \* \* \* he was well—cheerfully and with spirit he had fulfilled his embassy and was returning in glory. We were expecting him with pleasure, and how was he brought to our distracted hearts with the impression of death in his countenance and to expire in our arms—Oh! torture in the extreme. What a scene to encounter and live. Much has been spared to my dear aunt by the distance which separated her from her son. At the moment I wished her here, now I rejoice she was not an eye witness to

his death, though composure and manly firmness marked his expiring moments. God support us all my dear cousin, for our sorrows are all the same.

Your affectionate cousin and friend

**T. Wentworth.**

---

### **Spider Lake.**

Sixty years ago, there was no one of any rank or condition in the Town of Halifax better known than Joseph Hobson the Barber. His was one of those capacious hearts which had room enough for the joys and sorrows of others, and he was therefore always ready to rejoice with those who rejoiced and to weep with those who wept. His shop, the resort of all classes, was on the north side of Duke Street now occupied by the western half of the People's Bank Building and a little to the west of "The Two Sisters," two well known pumps which gave designation to all that immediate neighborhood. The shops occupied the whole of the ground flat of the wooden building owned I believe by him, and was, I should think from my recollection of it, about twenty feet square. Thither every afternoon resorted all the gossips of the Town, to give and take all the news and scandal of the day, and so it was that every thing going on was to be had there, and what was not known at Joe Hobson's was not worth knowing. So general a place of resort was it of an afternoon, that at about four o'clock it was frequently uncomfortably filled, and the man who either from neglect, business, weather, or anything else, made his appearance at home in the evening without having visited Hobson's and had not something to narrate in the way of news, stood a great chance of getting a poor cup of tea and a sullen greeting from both wife and daughters.

While the genial old man took pleasure to some extent in all laudable things, and sympathised in the undertakings of every one, there were two diversions which of all others especially engaged his affections. The one was music, the other

fishing. Of the former we cannot speak just now. Of the latter I have no hesitation in saying that no disciple of Isaac Walton ever more delighted in the sport, or more skillfully and successfully whipped a stream. With an eye to business, and knowing how much he was missed when he was away, he did not allow his rod to keep him from his shop, and although during the fishing season, he was every week to be found at some of the neighboring lakes or streams, he managed to indulge in the one and sedulously attend to the other by leaving his home in the night at such time as to enable him to be at the fishing ground as the day broke, and after some three hour's sport, to be back to his shop by breakfast time looking as neat as a new pin, and as fresh as a rose. The dish of glittering fish displayed on the sill of the capacious shop window, generally told the nature of the morning's occupation.

Next door to Hobson's, on the corner and immediately behind "The Two Sisters" dwelt an old shoemaker by the name of Izet, a character in his way, of whom I cannot now further speak save to say that he was just as enthusiastic a fisherman as his neighbor. Strange to say although the two men were always on the best of terms and held daily converse with each other, they never fished together. Izet had as his fishing companion, a worthy trader by the name of George Iles, whose grocery shop occupied a corner some three blocks above that of his friend. They were both Scotchmen; for ought I know from the same neighborhood.

Hobson also had a friend, and of him I must speak more particularly. He was George, or as he was affectionately designated by his friends Geordie Anderson, a man possessed of many of the same qualities of mind and heart as Hobson, and was one of the jolliest wags in the town. He was just as good natured as Hobson, but a little more reticent, and when he had a secret worth keeping could keep it, a quality which he said his friend did not possess. He never was heard to laugh, but when any bit of fun or mischief possessed him, his whole face from his forehead to his chin twittered with glee. He

had not an enemy in the town, except those upon whom he had perpetrated some practical joke, for he was, I am compelled to admit, an inveterate practical joker, and could no more resist an opportunity of carrying out his jokes than the tide could cease to ebb and flow. (Sherlock Crow and Bissett, Butcher boys Wellington and Washington.)\* That overweening passion had cost him some friends, much money, and many a hard run, and not infrequent tussle, in which he was apt to come off second best as he was but a small man. I suppose the tight little man is now some fifty years dead but I can see him as plainly as if he had stood before me today. He was I should say about five feet high and as round as an apple. His dress was a long skirted coat, a waistcoat which reached down to his hips with large flap pockets and his short but well formed legs were cased in knee breeches, gray woollen stockings and ankle jack boots laced tight around his ankles. Above all those, resting in an ample white neckcloth, was a round good natured face, with a pair of eyes which twinkled and sparkled like two stars, looking in fact as if the Cohinor occupied the one socket, the star of Berlin the other. Such is an imperfect picture of Geordie Anderson, the friend of Joe Hobson. They frequently talked together, often walked together, and always fished together. Geordie was of the two the most reticent as I have said, and often told his friend that if he ever committed a murder he would be sure to swing for it, for he could not keep even his own secret. We will see how far he was justified in his remark by the following narrative.

It so happened that on one memorable occasion, the two friends left their homes a little after midnight with their fishing gear, rowed themselves across the harbour and made their way through the thick bushes in the darkness towards as they thought a favourite fishing ground, but by some unaccountable blunder they had missed their way, got entirely astray and at last had to confess to each other that they did not know where they had got. Weary with wandering through the tangled bushes and fretting with the thought that they were wasting their

---

\*Illustrations.

morning in the woods, they had almost despaired of finding the fishing ground when just as the first gray streaks of light were shooting up into the heavens, they to their surprise, came upon the margin of a lake they had never seen before. It was a fine sheet of water, wooded to its margin, and lying asleep in the quiet of the surrounding hills. But just as the two men stepped upon a little hillock on the border of the lake, flop broke upon the stillness and a circle spread out upon the glassy bosom of the water. Again another, and another flop, and circle after circle, formed upon the water until ring was locked in ring the whole surface of the lake was covered with gentle eddies. In a moment all sense of fatigue was forgotten, as with looks of delight the rods were quickly unclasped, joint fitted into joint, the lines were hastily through the eyelets and favorite flies whirling through the air. The fish ignorant of the devices of the visitors, rose greedily in pursuit of the gaudy flies as they skimmed the water, and in a very short time both baskets were filled, and a large bunch of splendid fish secured varying from 3 to 4 pounds in weight, and the fishermen, very much of course elated, were at home in time for breakfast.

On their way home Anderson charged his friend not to reveal to any one their discovered treasure, and although Hobson promised to keep dark on the subject the other received the assurance with apparent incredibility "You know," he said, "Joe your weakness, now for once keep your own council and above all don't tell Iles or Izet or the Lake will soon be useless to us."

In a short time after their return home the whole sill of Hobson's shop window glistened, as the light of the morning sun fell upon the fine fish, and what with the crowds who gathered around the window, and those who made their way into the shop to examine and ask about the finny monsters, there was but little to be done in the way of shaving or hair cutting. Poor old Hobson loving the truth, but yet remembering the injunction of Anderson stuttered and stammered as he perpetrated one after another of those monstrosities known as white

lies, in response to the questions as to where the fish had been taken. But his interrogators as a rule were not very enthusiastic fishers, and therefore not very persistent in their enquiries. About eleven o'clock when the crowd had dispersed old Izet who had heard of the wondrous display, appeared in the shop with his leather apron, a last in one hand with a strip of leather tacked lightly to it and his awl in the other hand. "Hello Joe!" said the old man looking admiringly at the fish, "Where did you get those bouncers." Hobson repeated the reply he had been giving to others during the morning, but he had now a more cunning party to deal with.

"Pho, pho," said Izet as he looked at the drooping eyelids of honest Joe and saw falsehood written upon each of them. "That won't do. You know those fish were never taken in that water." Hobson became more confused and tried to evade further questions, but his neighbor would not let him escape, looked much hurt, and expressed himself so, and after a long time between entreaty and badinage he dragged the secret out of his victim, he having first promised faithfully not to reveal it to mortal man. Of course within half an hour it was communicated by Izet to Iles, and the two had made their arrangements for a speedy visit to the Lake. As Izet was as leaky as Hobson, he had incautiously communicated the secret to a friend, and informed him with a chuckle of the intended excursion of himself and Iles. That friend, also a chum of Anderson, soon conveyed the intelligence to him and Geordie, as early as he could manage to, made his way to Hobson's shop. As he entered Hobson saw by his manner that a storm was ahead and was not much surprised when the other said "So Joe you've let the cat out of the bag." As evasion was impossible Hobson had to admit that he had told the secret to Izet, but under a solemn pledge that it would not be revealed to any other. "Didn't I tell you so, rejoined his friend. I knew you could not hold it, and I am not much surprised. Izet's promises of secrecy was about as good as your own. He has told it to Iles and they have already made arrangements

to fish the lake, and are to leave tomorrow night, but I have determined that they shall not carry out their scheme and you know when I make up my mind to a thing I carry it out." Hobson, kind hearted old soul, tried to remonstrate with him, reminded him that they were all neighbors, and friends, and that they themselves would have felt very much hurt if Izet had made such a discovery and refused to allow them to participate in it first. But it was all in vain, and Anderson more excited and angry than his friend had ever seen him before, left the shop with a reiteration of his threat.

A short time before that, an Indian more in want of food than clothing, had offered a complete suit of his clothes, including his hat and an eagle feather of portentous size, for sale, and Anderson thinking perhaps that it might be useful to him in his excursions through the woods, or more probably that it might aid him in carrying out one of his practical jokes, had become the purchaser of it. It now suggested itself that it could be turned to profitable account, and the very idea that it could be so used at once mollified his wrath.

On the next night, therefore, an hour before Izet and Iles were to set out, he with his full Indian suit, an old rusty musket, and the feather, piloted himself across the harbour and made his way up to the margin of the Lake where he esconces himself in a thicket. In due time his victims followed in their boat, landed at the place told to Izet by Hobson, and following the blazes on the trees as cut by the others as they could be discerned in the twilight, arrived on the shore of the Lake just as the morning star began to twinkle less brilliantly in the southern heavens, and Phoebus stretched up his grey fingers in the east as if it were to catch hold of the retreating pall of night and aid him in hauling himself above the horizon. As the two men stood upon the margin of the Lake the sun with a bound jumped up over the hill and suffused it with its rosy light. No sound disturbed the repose except the gentle sighing of the woods but although there was not a breath of wind, the bosom of the lake was not undisturbed for it was dappled all over with

the fish, which were rising hither and thither in all directions. As the two enthusiastic sportsmen glutted their eyes with the ravishing scene, made doubly beautiful to them by the circles on every hand, they looked at each other and with a merry laugh Izet remarked "What do you think Geordie Anderson would say if he saw us now," little thinking that Geordie was but a few yards from them, his face beaming with delight. In a short time their hamper was opened and its contents spread out, for not knowing how long it might take them to reach the lake they made their arrangements to breakfast there and spend part of the day. Their rods were put together with all possible expedition as the rising fish made them eager to get at once to work. Every thing being ready they were cautiously treading upon the yielding moss hillocks at the margin of the water when the crash of a bough in the neighboring thicket caused them to start.

No very recent atrocities had characterized the conduct of the Indians towards the whites, but past acts of treachery and cruelty were not so remote as to have been forgotten, and an Indian was therefore still an object of great dread. The evident crash of a limb near at hand, therefore caused both men to start and look at each other inquiringly but as nothing further was heard for the next few anxious moments, they were again about to make ready for action, when another and louder crash caused them both to start, and with pallid faces to turn towards the spot from whence the noise proceeded. "Did you hear that George?" said Izet. "Indeed I did," said the other, what can it be?" and as they both directed there anxious gaze towards the wood to their horror and dismay up rose an Indian clad in the full habiliments of his tribe. His face daubed with war paint and a very tall eagle feather rising from his cap gave him the apparent height of a giant. With loud and evidently angry words, purely extempore, which of course neither of the affrighted men comprehended, he with impatient gesture motioned them to be off, and as they with trembling limbs hesitated and gazed apparently spellbound, to their horror the Indian raised

a gun to his shoulder with a wild Indian whoop. In an instant their rods were flung from them, their hamper and its contents abandoned, and they in full flight not knowing where they were going, and scarcely able to make their way along from terror, they frequently ran against one another against trees and tumbled and fell, but feeling in anticipation the bullet or the scalping knife of the Indian, with their clothes torn and their faces and hands scratched and bleeding, they made their way through the forest and in a breathless state after a half hour's run made their way to the shore sprung into their boat and never felt that they were out of danger, until they were on the waters of the harbour, only too glad to have abandoned everything and saved their lives. At seven o'clock in rags and tatters they made their way to their homes and narrated to their trembling families their narrow escape.

In the meantime Geordie Anderson as soon as they disappeared, having thrown down his musty firelock which had been innocent of powder or shot for many a long day, laid aside the cap and feather, threw himself down in the dewey moss and fairly rolled in it while his face was exuberant with delight. No sound escaped him, but as every feature laughed as he moved uneasily in his clothes, it seemed as if the fun was almost too much for him, and that he must either scream or suffocate. After a time becoming somewhat composed, he went to the spot from which the hapless fugitives had made their escape, and as he looked at the rods with their tangled lines hanging from the bushes, their baskets and their untasted breakfast, he nearly elapsed into his former plethora of merriment, but at last with a great chuckle sat down upon a rock, partook of the forsaken breakfast and then clearing one of the fishing rods, fished for an hour with much unction and success, and returned in time to pay his accustomed morning visit to Hobson's shop. I shan't venture to repeat his narrative of the morning's adventure to Hobson, suffice it to say that it was interrupted by frequent and long pauses, during some of which his face be-

came so purple and swollen, that Hobson begged him to desist fearing that it would result in a fit of apoplexy.

As for Izet and Iles they were the heroes of the day. Once within the precincts of the town, and feeling that they were safe, they recounted to their friends the perils from which they had escaped. They asserted that two Indians armed with guns and scalping knives had marched down upon them, and that fearing their numbers might increase, they, not being armed with anything but their rods, had thought that discretion was the better part of valour and had retired from the scene. That wondrous tale was repeated from time to time for a day or two, until at last, just as he was finishing the narrative to an admiring audience in Hobson's shop, Anderson appeared and raising his stick to his shoulder and pointing it at Izett, he uttered the same war hoop that had escaped him at the Lake. In a moment the truth flashed upon the mind of Izett and with a hearty malediction he fled from the shop. The audience, astonished at the sudden interruption, having turned to Anderson for an explanation, he at one narrated the true version of the affair amid shouts of laughter. For days those who passed the "Two Sisters" heard the hammer of the old cobbler as with impatient blows it fell upon his lapstone, but no one saw his face for the next week.

---

### Popper O'Hea.

Amongst the many odd characters who figured in the early days of the town was a countryman of my own who rejoiced in the euphonious soubriquet of Popper O'Hea. Popper was a man to whom nature had not been bountiful in the way of looks. He stood about six feet two, in height, and was as straight and shapeless, as a maypole, not an ounce of flesh seemed to be on his bones, not a drop of blood in his veins. A long thin, cadaverous face, with as simple an expression as that of Don Quixote, was profusely adorned with long flowing and curled hair of a brick red color. Partly for os-

tentation, and partly I presume as an advertisement of his skill in his craft (for he was a barber and hairdresser), his ruby locks were with the most elaborate care tortured into numberless little corkscrew curls, and fell over his shoulders with as much profusion if not as much grace as a Lord Chancellor's wig. Popper was a well known character and was familiarly designated by that name not only by all men and women, but also by all the children of the town. He was a good-natured, easy-going fellow, with a very decided brogue, and although his countenance when in repose wore a sad expression, there was in him a love of fun and a good deal of the drollery so characteristic of his countrymen. His shop was at the corner of the market wharf, where now stands a brilliantly painted shop occupied by Mr. Leahy. A long pole with lines of beauty in red, white and blue proclaimed his vocation, and although far from being a knowing shaver, he was a very good barber and hair dresser and being itinerant in the performance of his duties was to be found from morning to morning in all the best houses in the town. It was Popper's fortune, whether good or bad you must determine for yourselves, to have a wife known as Mary O'Hea, a good looking buxom woman some years his junior, trig and tidy, but spicy in disposition, who regarded with contempt the proverb that a meek and quiet spirit is an ornament to a woman. Four little children graced their board. Mary amongst other peculiarities, possessed that singular and uncommon characteristic of her sex, a love of dress, and as Popper although constantly employed had with his small charges and growing family, as much as he could do to supply them with the ordinary comforts of life, that peculiarity of Mary's was a constant source of bickering and unhappiness. She but seldom made her appearance in Chapel, alleging as an excuse for her neglect of duty, the demands made upon the whole of her time by her children and household duties, and Popper, I regret to add, never urged her to go, for she never returned from her duties, without bringing back the recollections, not of the prayers or of the sermon, but of the shape,

color, or quality of some other woman's dress, bonnet, shawl, cloak or some other article of dress, and Monday morning scarcely dawned, when the broad keynote was struck, and poor Popper informed that the last coveted article must be had. From that time forth nothing was to be heard at breakfast, dinner or tea in the little parlour back of the shop, in the shop and everywhere, but the one theme, and when at times the persecuted barber under the consciousness that he could not afford it, would resolutely and sometimes sternly refuse to supply the money for the coveted article, the last argument used would be "Well if I am going to look like a beggar and not show myself amongst my neighbors, and friends, I had better die. I know you want to tire me of life and to get rid of me, and I shall just go and throw myself over the wharf," and should that threat not produce the desired effect then after kissing the children, and telling Popper that she forgave him for all his cruel treatment to her, she would hurry down the wharf, knowing to a certainty that e'er she reached the end of it, he would be down after her, and call her to come back, with the promise, that she should have all she demanded. Unfortunately these requirements, like the heads that Popper operated upon grew stronger every day, and at last in sheer desperation, he seriously thought of doing, that which his rapacious wife had so often threatened. Fortunately in his despair he bethought him of his clergyman, and determined to make his breast the repository of his troubles. At that time a kind-hearted man, but one who knew a little more of human nature than Popper did, occupied the Parsonage, a house which if my memory serves me right, stood on Barrington Street, where the Brick School-house now stands, with the Chapel in the rear of it, being about a hundred feet from the west side of Barrington Street. The name of the Priest I know not, but to him went Popper, and unfolded the story of his grief. The good father could scarcely contain himself, as the poor barber in a state of intense agitation, with Hibernian pathos and eloquence, narrated the story of his woes. At last he paused and looking

to the Father for some consolatory expression, was horrified to find him nearly convulsed with laughter. "Oh Popper, Popper, he at last ejaculated, I always thought you a good natured, easy going fellow, but I did not think you were quite such an idiot, and that you'd allow any woman to fool you to such an extent. Why man, your wife has been regularly fooling you, and I must candidly tell you, I can have no sympathy for such a spoon. But I am glad you have come to me, and now if you promise implicitly to follow out my instructions to you, I promise you I will put an end to all such persecutions, for the future;" and then he detailed to his overbothered auditor, his scheme for restoration to comfort. As he listened, he shook his head mournfully, and expressed his fears that the proposed scheme would prove abortive, and would likely result in his wife's destruction, but the Priest laughed at his fears, and told him that if his plan resulted in his wife's suicide, he would bear all the burden of the sin, and if possible, the penalties of the law in his place. Re-assured in that way, Popper returned to his home determined, at all hazards, to carry out the instructions to the letter. An opportunity for testing its expediency soon presented itself. Easter Sunday arrived, a day as we all know when no woman would appear in Church, without some bit of new finery, and as Mary took her seat in her pew, and looked around the Church, as brilliant in colors as a tulip bed, she broke a hundred times the tenth commandment, and coveted and desired every gaudy article of dress that her wandering eye fell upon. Better for her had she not entered her church, that day, for she did not heed one word of the service, and came out into the street in a most unchristian spirit, one of the unhappiest and most discontented of the congregation. The light of Monday morning scarcely dawned, when an impatient turn of Mary awoke Popper. A sigh broke from her as she said, "Popper are you awake," "I" hesitatingly said Popper, with a shudder, "I don't think I am." "Ah" said she, "that's always the way with you, you shuffle, What's the use of beginning the week with a lie on

your tongue?" and as there was no response she proceeded, "How did you feel when you looked round the church yesterday and saw every one of our neighbors dressed decently except your poor down-trodden wife, bad cess to you. Every one of my acquaintances with some new article of dress upon them and poor me without a rag." Up to that time Popper had been lying with his back towards her, but he then turned and as was then the custom for men and women of all conditions to wear night-caps, you may imagine what an imposing appearance he presented, as with a tight cotton cap drawn close around his pallid face and his untrimmed locks all clustered around his neck and shoulders, he to her surprise, said, "Mary I'm sorry to hear you talk so, but the fact is, since your mother Eve ate the apple in the garden of Eden and dress became the fashion, poor man's comfort has been at an end." That was too much for Mary, she attempted a reply but indignation choked her and the words died in her throat. With a bound she sprang from the bed and after overturning two of her children, in an abortive attempt to dress them, breaking a cup and saucer and lacerating her finger with a pin, she at last became sufficiently calm to get through her accustomed morning duties. Popper's strange mode of dealing with her complaints tortured her much during the morning, but she determined by a more than ordinary vigorous use of the old argument, if necessary to put down the opposition, never for a moment doubting that her efforts must as usual result in victory. Breakfast over, Popper had made his way into the shop, put on a clean apron, stropped his razors, and placed his little mug of water on the hob to heat, when Mary appeared as the first intruder upon the place of business. "Popper" said she with the voice of a seraph "did you see the shawl Mrs. Martin Hunt had on yesterday?" "No," said he "I did not, but the new altar cloth was a fine one," "I dare say it was," she replied, "but it wasn't that I was talking about. Now Popper I want a new shawl and that is just such a one as I want. Its good and serviceable and cheap." "Why" said he "didn't you get one last fall,

and didn't you then tell me you shouldn't want another for years." "That's true," she replied, "but that was a winter shawl and I shan't want another like that for some time, but it's a spring shawl I want and must have, if you wish me to be decent." "Mary," said Popper, with a dogged look, "I can't afford it and I'm not going to starve my children and beggar you all, by buying dress I cannot pay for, so there's an end to it." Mary looked at him with surprise, but nothing daunted, and satisfied that she had only to draw out the last arrow from her quiver, she at once replied: "Well then Popper, if such is the cruel and disgraceful way in which you are determined to treat me, I have nothing further to live for and perhaps when the execrations of your neighbors compel you to take my drowned body from the water, you will, when too late, realize how cruelly you have treated me. I shall just go and drown myself." "Don't be so rash," said Popper in an indifferent tone, at the same time trying the edge of a razor upon the palm of his hand, "but if you are determined, like a good woman, see that the dinner is prepared before you go, but perhaps you'll stay to dinner, as you may have a long journey before you get anything to eat." As this was a little beyond anything he had ventured upon before, his wife was not a little staggered, but she felt satisfied that the contest would be of brief duration, and that the time of relenting was not far distant. In a few moments she appeared with her bonnet and as she tied the strings of it, called the children and kissing them, bade them farewell. Popper by that time, was seated at a little table, with a barber's block before him, industriously gathering up some stray hairs and smoothing them upon the block. "Good-bye, Popper, cruel Popper, sobbed his wife, let me give you one kiss to show you I die without any angry feeling towards you," "One moment he said until I take the twist out of this lock. Now love, not one kiss but two as we shall not in all probability have an opportunity for another until we meet in a better world." And now, he said, "farewell wife" as he took a long comb from above his ear, and carefully parted the hair on the forehead

of the block. She lingered for a moment, opened the door, and was gone, Popper moved uneasily upon his chair, and wiped his brow as he hastily threw aside the comb, and was about to start to his feet, as Mary again made her appearance, upon the threshold of the shop. "Hello," said he regaining his composure, "What brought you back, I thought by this time you would have been at the end of the wharf." "So I would," she said with a pallid face, "but I thought I would like to have one more kiss of the children, and say once more to you that I forgive you." "Oh, is that all," he said. "There are the little ones laughing in the back room, and for me, I am not worth thinking about, cruel, hard-hearted wretch, that I have been." Mary retreated to the back room, and was there long, so long that he began to think she had made up her mind to avail herself of his invitation to stay to dinner, but at last she re-appeared, and with a hurried good-bye, took her departure. When satisfied that she had gone some little distance, down the wharf, he flew to a clink in the blind of the little back room, which looked down the wharf, and there anxiously watched her retreating footsteps. She had not proceeded far, when she cast a further glance over her shoulder. Seeing, that he was not following her, she at a less rapid pace, proceeded a short distance further, and again looked behind her, and so from time to time she walked and looked, and paused, until she got near the end of the wharf. By that time Popper, although terribly agitated, felt assured that there was no fear of his becoming a widower, at least by the voluntary act of his wife. Earnestly, anxiously, she looked up the wharf, and as no Popper appeared, she seemed uncertain what to do, at times turning round towards home, and involuntarily making a step or two in that direction, and then checking herself and going towards the water. At last, after the lapse of some quarter of an hour, Popper, now fully assured, that his clergyman had been right in his surmises, put on his cap, drew the peak partly over his eyes, threw his long apron over his shoulder, and sauntered down the wharf, trying hard to whistle as he went, but somehow he found that

hard work, for as he attempted a bar something would come up in his throat, and knock the whistle out of his mouth, and then he would try again but with scarcely more success. Onward he strolled, bowing his head further as he approached his wife, until, within a few feet of her, he looked up and with a start, said, "What, Mary are you here yet, I thought you would have been over the agony before this time." "No Popper" she said in a low tone, "I thought I would like to see you once more before death, and I have waited until you came down, but now I think I am ready to die," and she turned and made a hasty step towards the water. "Good-bye," she said, "Good-bye," said the inexorable barber. She turned and looked at him. "What! Popper", she sobbed, drawing to him with an incredulous look, "would you really let me drown myself. Surely you would not do so." "Yes Mary," he said, I have made up my mind to it, it was a hard struggle, but I have resolved, and now the sooner you depart the better, I have found that it was either the Gaol for me and starvation for my children, or the water for you. I think you have made a wise decision, and I will always respect your memory for it." "Oh," she said, "you surely are not in earnest, and the water looks so cold and dark," she added. "I think, I won't drown myself today, and will go home for a time to my children." "Mary" said Popper, with a look of assured determination and ferocity, "That will never do. You have vowed to drown yourself, in the presence of your children, and it would not do to let them think that you had been guilty of a wilful lie. You have determined that you will die, and so have I" said he with the look of a second Bluebeard, as he made a spring towards her, caught her roughly by the wrist and hauled her towards the end of the wharf. Convinced at last, that he was in earnest, a cry of horror burst from her as she vainly struggled to release herself from his grasp, and he dragged her towards the water. At last she threw herself upon her knees, clasped his legs in her embrace and supplicated for mercy. "Come along" he said, "You must go over, but she held on so vigorously that he was unable

to move, and at length said to her, "Now foolish woman get up and go to your home, look after your children, and let your neighbors dress as they like, while you conform to your husband's circumstances, and I now swear to you by the beard of Mahomet which was a great oath for a barber, if you ever repeat that threat again, you shall die as sure as you are a woman." Many of the neighbors, who had been brought to the spot by the commotion, and who had often heard of the threat before, were highly amused at the scene. As for Mrs. O'Hea, crest fallen and ashamed, she shrunk up the wharf and made her way into her home a wiser if a sadder woman.





**LAWRENCE O'CONNOR DOYLE.**  
(From Bourinot's Builders of Nova Scotia.)



“A SKETCH OF LAWRENCE O'CONNOR DOYLE, A MEMBER OF THE HOUSE OF ASSEMBLY IN THE THIRTIES AND FORTIES.”

By GEORGE MULLANE.

Read before Nova Scotia Historical Society, 6th December, 1912.

---

To rescue from almost total oblivion the memory of a man whose doings and sayings vastly interested the generation in which he flourished is a somewhat difficult task, when it happens that none of his contemporaries are alive nor any relative or descendant that had met or conversed with him who could describe his characteristics. Still it seems but just that the attempt should be made in the case of one who held a high place in the circle of Reformers who obtained responsible government.

In this historic building gathered a number of men whose talents and acquirements would have gained fame in the wider arena of the mother country—men whose eloquence and persistence changed the old order of affairs and brought about the new form of responsible government as we know it to-day. In the Supreme Court, a few feet from here Joseph Howe stood at the bar charged with libel, and was pronounced not guilty by twelve of his fellow citizens. These halls rang with cheers from an immense crowd when the verdict was made known. In this chamber sat the opponents of the reformers within closed doors. One of the principal men to open these doors to admit the public is the subject of this paper. To effect the free admission of the public, Lawrence O'Connor Doyle moved four resolutions, the first of which was as follows; "Resolved, that the practice hitherto pursued by His Majesty's Legislative Council of this Province of excluding

the people from their deliberations is not only at variance with the House of Lords in England and that of several of the Legislative councils in other British North American colonies, but contrary to the spirit of the British constitution, and injurious to the interests and liberties of the country. Mr. Doyle's speech on the occasion was spirited and logical beyond criticism.

Lawrence Doyle, the father of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, was a native of Ireland and a leading merchant of Halifax in the early years of the nineteenth century. His place of business was on the water front—in the vicinity of the present N. & M. Smith's wharves on Lower Water Street. Just one hundred years ago he was an officer of the Charitable Irish Society. The records of that Society show the following for 1812:—

Hon. Charles Morris, President.

Samuel Hood D. George, Secretary of the Province, Vice-President.

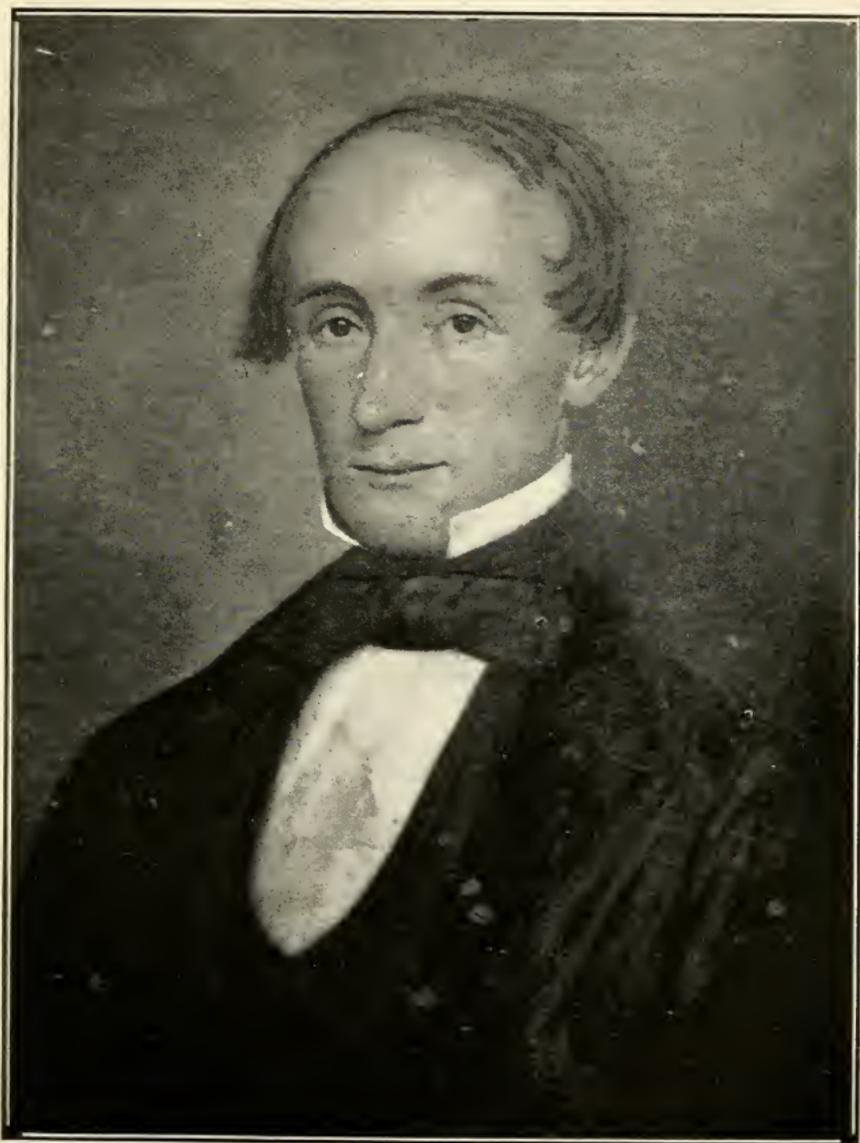
James E. Butler and Lawrence Doyle, Assistant Vice-Presidents.

Robert Phealon, Secretary.

Henry Austen, Assistant-Secretary.

It may be said of Lawrence Doyle that he was a faithful member of the Roman Catholic Church, manifesting a deep interest in religious and philanthropic works. At the time of his death he owned and occupied the present residence of Wylie Smith on Pleasant Street. After his death this residence came into the possession of Sir Edward Kenny. In 1826 Lawrence Doyle was president of the Charitable Irish Society, having followed in that office the Hon. Joseph Allison, a member of the old "Council of Twelve", and a partner in business of Hon. Enos Collins.

An elder brother of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle named Morgan, died on the 20th of July, 1845. A table head-stone marks his last resting place in Holy Cross Cemetery. Lawrence



**HON. WILLIAM ANNAND.**  
**Born 1808.**

(From oil portrait by J. G. Chandler, 1856, now in possession of W. H. Drake, Halifax.)



Doyle and his wife Bridget O'Connor Doyle are buried in old St. Peter's burying ground.

Lawrence O'Connor Doyle was born in the same year as the Hon. Joseph Howe. His birth took place on the 27th of February 1804, while that of Howe was on the 13th of December, 1804, thereby making Doyle the elder by about nine months and a half. The birth register of old St. Peter's Chapel, Halifax, records that Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, son of Lawrence Doyle and Bridget O'Connor, was baptized on the 9th of March, 1804, aged twelve days. The ceremony of baptism was performed by the Rev. E. Burke, Vicar-General to the Bishop of Quebec.

Of Howe's lieutenants in the great fight for responsible government in Nova Scotia, none is so little known to-day as Lawrence O'Connor Doyle. And yet, no one in the early stages of the constitutional struggle took a more active part in the various steps that finally wrested power from the "old Council of Twelve." Huntingdon, the Youngs, and Annand, stand prominently forth as the younger liberals who rallied to the standard of reform, but Doyle's part seems overshadowed by his confreres who remained longer in the public eye.

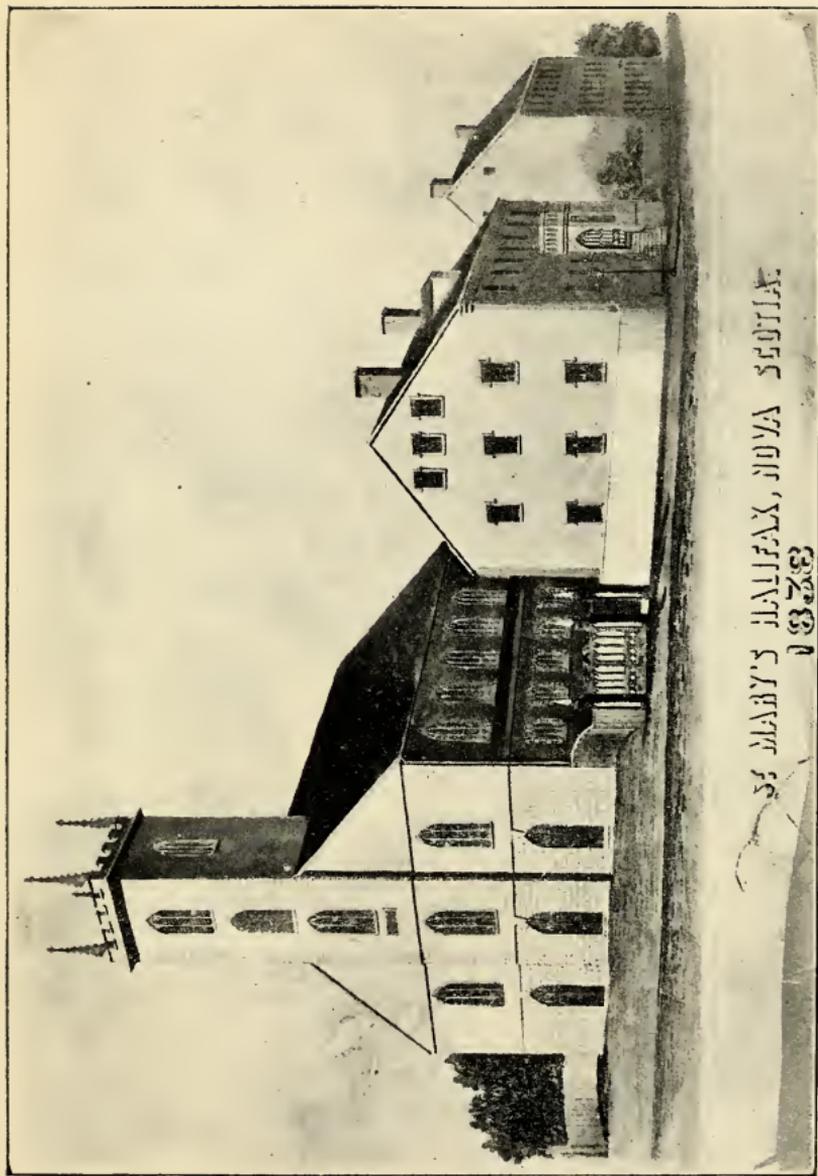
Lawrence O'Connor Doyle's fame as an astute politician and an ardent reformer, appears to have suffered somewhat from his reputation as a humorist and a *bon-vivant*. His more solid qualities lose distinctness through the nebulous light which surrounds him as a wit and boon companion.

Doyle had all the better traits which characterize the Kelt, but he lacked the personal dignity which stood some of his contemporaries in good stead, in the absence of rhetorical abilities. Judge Longley, in his recent life of Howe, says: "Mr. Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, was a man of the most delightful character whom Howe—not a poor judge of such matters—regarded as the wittiest man he had ever met.

When Doyle was born, the outlook, outside of trade, was dark indeed for an ambitious lad of the Roman Catholic faith. There were no seminaries where a Catholic youth could obtain a superior education. The test oaths debarred him from entering King's college—the only institution in the province offering a fit training for a professional career. There are now but meagre details of his youth to be gathered. His father purchased from Bishop Burke a building on the site of the present St. Mary's glebe, which had been built by the bishop as a college, and which his lordship attempted to found, but which fell through for want of adequate means to maintain such an institution.

Doyle was educated abroad—probably at Stonyhurst. The Halifax of his youth offered no opportunity for the education of one of the Roman Catholic persuasion, without coming under influences unfavorable to his faith. Even dissenters of all kinds were debarred from taking advantage of a training in a seminary which received a substantial grant from the people that outnumbered by five to one the privileged denomination that controlled the Windsor college. One of the ordinances of that college read as follows: "No pupil was allowed to attend Mass, or meeting house of Presbyterian, Baptist, or Methodist, or to be present at seditious or rebellious meetings." If a youth entered King's college he would have to put aside the religious observances in which he was trained, and before he could obtain a degree he would have to subscribe to the thirty-nine articles—in fact, become a member of the Church of England.

In the *Weekly Chronicle* of April, 1821, appeared some verses on the death of Bishop Burke. It was stated that they were "lines by a very young gentleman, a native of this town at H. H. (probably intended for S. H., meaning Stonyhurst) college in England, on receiving information of the death of the Right Rev. Dr. Edmund Burke. The lines, which were signed "L. O'C\*\*\*\*D\*le" are as follows:



ST MARY'S HALIFAX, NOVA SCOTIA  
1878

The Glebe House to the right, was for a considerable period the parental home of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle.

(From a Water Colour by William Eagar.)



## BISHOP BURKE.

From every eye the tear shall start,  
And every heaving bosom swell;  
A bitter pang shall wring each heart,  
When tolls the death inviting knell.

The babe unborn shall hear his fame,  
And fading age bewep his doom;  
The Indian fierce, repeat his name,  
Amidst the wigwam's cheerless gloom.

If e'er a heart could sorrow feel,  
If in the eye one tear could lurk;  
That heart may vie with hardest steel,  
That heaves not at the name of Burke.

Then fare thee well since life is past,  
And icy sleep hath locked thy frame;  
Yet still, methinks, each plaintive blast,  
Sighs softly forth our Edmund's name.

When Doyle arrived at an age which qualified him to assume some calling in life, the religious disabilities were still in force throughout the English-speaking portions of the British empire. The advance of liberal principles and a more tolerant spirit towards Roman Catholics gave the hope that a Catholic relief bill could not long be postponed in Nova Scotia, and decided Doyle's father to article his son to the profession of the law.

It is pertinent to recall an incident from which, perhaps, there may be formed an idea as to the manner of man Doyle was. An ungenerous article in one of the denominational journals reflecting somewhat on the efforts that were being made, in the late thirties, by the Roman Catholics of Nova Scotia to improve and extend their academic institutions stirred Doyle, on the spur of the moment, to take up the cudgels in behalf of his co-religionists.

In the course of his communication to the press he said: I am not disposed, nor probably qualified, to adventure within the lists of controversy. By the accident of birth, a Catholic, I find my spiritual moorings to that faith *trebly-linked* by the convictions of manhood. I interpose not between any one's opinions as to his proper way towards the other world. The editor whom I now address talks of coercing conscience. While a boy, at a distance of 3000 miles from my home, driven thither by the penal laws of which he so pathetically "*hinc illae lacrymae*", speaks—immured within the enclosures of a monastery—I was taught as a tenet of my faith, in the words of St. Cyprian of the 2nd century: "*non est religionis-religionem cogere*"—not to coerce conscience. Yet we are to suffer under imputations of principles utterly at variance with the same.

Again: Is "bear not false witness against thy neighbor," among the commandments of those who profess vital christianity, or not? For such appears in the catechism of our Catholic children. If they practice it not—they sin. Every congregation is allowed to institute its useful society for charitable purposes, for attending upon the sick, distribution of relief and other eleemosynary ends. Yet an institution in the Catholic church, almost solely devoted to the uses of itinerant charity, unconnected with any conventual system of education, is denounced, because it is a matter of alarm in the mind of the Christian editor, lest the broth which may moisten the lip of our dying pauper should bear the flavor of holy water.

Again: At this season of Advent when the minds of all sincere believers in the doctrines of our Saviour are, or ought to be, occupied by the sacred reminiscences of His nativity, I feel more sensibly the edge of the weapon aimed at us. The Roman Catholics of the province have been an unobtrusive class; they have not been as mendicants for private or public alms; they have erected their own edifice of worship at the cost of thousands, without the solicitation or receipt of one

penny from a member of any other class of christians; and yet forsooth, they are not to be permitted to rest in peace, if after a discharge of all earthly claims upon their establishment, they venture to apply the surplus of their own monies for the purposes of education.

Again: If we do not instruct we are reproached with ignorance. If we attempt to teach we are arraigned for superstition. And this, out of a spirit of "vital christianity." A more insidiously written article than the one which constitutes the object of my notice I have seldom read. In earlier life I have perused the attacks of Sturges and Greer. In later times the virulent phillipics of Sullivan and McGhee. These were fair assaults. The point was directed to your breast, you saw it, you could parry or repel. But my christian editor, "willing to wound but afraid to strike", mingles his apologetic tones with the accents of injury.

In a prefatory way, it may be said, that the first constituency Mr. Doyle represented in the house of assembly was the Isle Madame. That was in the early thirties. He was then about 30 years of age. The period was too far back for anybody now on the stage to recall his personal appearance when he first stepped into the public arena, but he has been described as being rather short, of a hale complexion, careless and plain in his dress, and had a cast of countenance which inclined to good nature.

When Parliament was in session Doyle usually addressed the chair from the head of the bench on the Speaker's left. His politics were Liberal first, last, and all the time—and as a public man his conduct was strictly consistent. No member of the house came to the attack more fearlessly than the youthful member for Isle Madame. Speaking of him in the early forties it was remarked that he had been an able and unflinching advocate of reform. He invariably declaimed against the propriety of the Council debating with closed doors. The house was hardly organized in 1837 before he formally brought

the matter under its notice. He was the author of the Quadrennial bill—one of the most popular measures passed during the struggles for constitutional reform.

Mr. Doyle seldom made a set speech, but he was pithy and laconic in his impromptu replies. He had a shrill, clear voice, more action in debate than many of his compeers, and never addressed empty benches. He was decidedly the most humorous debater in the house. Many a fell inroad his occasional sallies of wit made upon the long-visaged seriousness of an important debate.

To repeat: Doyle was educated at Stonyhurst College. No doubt it was his father's intention to educate him for the priesthood, but on the youth showing a disinclination for clerical life, and the repeal of the obnoxious laws against Catholics offering opportunities of a professional career, the design of the parent had to give way to the inclination of the son—hence it came about that Doyle was articled for five years to Richard John Uniacke, the old Attorney-General. On the 22nd of January, 1828, Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, Martin I. Wilkins, John C. Halliburton and Stephen H. Moore were admitted as attorneys, and on January the 29th, 1829, all four became barristers.

Let me, by the way, refer to an item or two of a more local interest: St. Patrick's day, 1828, was celebrated at the Exchange Coffee house; about seventy gentlemen sat down to an excellent repast. James Boyle Uniacke presided over the festival, and was ably supported by L. O'Connor Doyle, as vice-president.

When Doyle's father purchased the college building from Father Burke and the Catholic corporation, he at once set to work to improve the lower part of the building and to make it suitable for a residence. This was in the early boyhood of the son.

During Doyle's student days, contagious and infectious diseases raged in Halifax. A report of the House of Assembly

states that out of a population of eleven thousand, eight hundred had died. The disease which afflicted the inhabitants of the town had been brought by immigrant ships, and James B. Uniacke, afterwards Doyle's friend,—and then, again his colleague and opponent—in the legislature, was taken down by the small-pox.

When the Archbishop of Quebec visited Halifax in 1815, he kept a diary of his journey. In it there is recorded that Doyle's father gave a dinner to which a number of the principal Catholics were invited to meet the Archbishop. His lordship remarks slyly about this function: "the conversation turned generally on religious topics, but while speaking of edifying matters, these good Irishmen were most unsparing of wine."

It was during this visit that the Archbishop was a guest at Mount Uniacke, while *en-route* to Annapolis. He described graphically the lordly residence of the old attorney general, presided over by his second wife and his daughter, the widow of Admiral Sir Andrew Mitchell.

It may be noted here some characteristics of the young reformer who was destined to lend such valuable aid in bringing about responsible government. His nature was open, genial and frank. No artificial atmosphere enveloped him; the real man was revealed to all who came in contact with him. His disposition was most cheerful, and he went through life seemingly untroubled and with a display of wit that was irresistible. His political foes were attracted to him because in no sense, was he vindictive or resentful, but always "the hail fellow well met." In the hottest moment of party strife he bore himself as a gentleman and a christian.

Mr. Doyle was the second Roman Catholic to take his seat in the Parliament of Nova Scotia, and the first Catholic outside the province of Quebec to be admitted a member of the legal profession. On Friday, 8th February, 1833, Mr. Doyle having been returned duly elected a member for the township of Arichat took his seat in the House of Assembly—

taking the oath prescribed for Roman Catholics in the presence of Hibbert Newton Binney, one of the commissioners appointed by the lieutenant-governor for the purpose. On the same day Alex. Stewart, Wm. B. Bliss and Lawrence Doyle were appointed a committee to examine and report on expiring laws.

I have enjoyed, recently, a conversation with an aged citizen (Thomas Granville), now in his 94th year, and among other things he told me that where the Sisters' convent now stands, on Barrington street, there was in the early years a vegetable garden for the use of the resident priest. Upon this site afterwards there was built a small double cottage. In one end there resided a Mrs. McSweeney who kept a school for young children. Doyle's father, who lived nearby, owned three donkeys, who it seems had free access to the street, and who were great favorites with the children that attended the dame's school.

The donkeys with unerring instinct knew the precise hour of the children's dismissal, and, accordingly, every afternoon they would repair to the vicinity of the school to await the coming out of the children, who gathered around them, and who would, in turn, mount their backs, to be ridden about the streets, until relieved by the coming of Mr. Doyle's servant, and taken to their enclosure. Father Burke (afterwards Bishop) relates that Mr. Doyle, the father of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, whilst excavating the basement of the college building, found a "spring of running water capable of supplying half the town—we have put a pump in it." That same spring of delicious cold water, it has been told us by Archbishop O'Brien, was used by the various inmates of the old glebe house for the next eighty years. In the new glebe house it holds its place of honor and usefulness. Bishop Plessis, of Quebec, who visited Halifax in 1818, says: "the college is let at a low rent to a Catholic merchant named Lawrence Doyle. He occupied the lower part. Lawrence O'Connor Doyle at the outset of his political career intended to stand as a candidate for Cape Breton. But, as he said himself in reply to

James Boyle Uniacke, in the debate on the Cape Breton election riots of 1832, on visiting Cape Breton, I subsequently determined to offer for the Isle Madame, as I conceived I would be equally honored by representing the only Catholic township in the province."

The old inhabitant whose name I have taken the liberty to mention, described to me the appearance of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle and James Boyle Uniacke, as he saw them in their prime in the House of Assembly on a St. Patrick's day in the forties. Little business was being transacted and as he sat in the gallery he saw Doyle enter dressed in a dark green cutaway coat; he stood erect, broad-shouldered, a little over the middle height, his short round Irish face beaming with good nature and humour. Uniacke, he said, looked the aristocrat, that he was—tall, graceful and a "prince among men." He was always attired in the latest London fashion and on this occasion had a large spray of "the dear little shamrock" pinned on his breast. Larry Doyle's wife was a daughter of Lieut. Driscoll of the Royal Navy. Her brother was a clerk in the Halifax Post office. Their married life was brief; and it was the opinion of Doyle's friends that her death, in the bloom of youth, had much to do in causing him to view life with an air of indifference.

After the well-known incident of Joseph Howe's victory over the magistrates of Halifax, a number of Nova Scotians residing in the city of New York subscribed a sum of money towards purchasing a silver water pitcher, to be presented to the victor in the legal battle against entrenched privileges. Lawrence O'Connor Doyle was one of a committee charged by Howe's friends in New York to make a public presentation of the testimonial. It took place at the old court house—market square.

The next glimpse we get of Doyle was when he rose at the opening of the session of 1837, and seconded a resolution to the effect: "That the house recognize no religious distinction

in the appointment of a chaplain, and that equal justice and equal courtesy be extended to all denominations in the selection of a chaplain." The chaplain of the house had always been a clergyman of the Church of England, and the Rev. Fitzgerald Uniacke was again an applicant for the position. Mr. Uniacke was greatly respected by all shades of religious opinions, and some of the supporters of the Church of England in the house tried to make it appear that Mr. Uniacke was opposed on personal grounds.

Mr. Doyle met the charge in a straightforward manner; he said "that the observations of one of the hon. gentlemen had given the resolution a complexion that the mover did not intend it to bear. The question was not one of a personal nature—it involved a general principle, the pre-eminence of the Church of England.

This was one of the first moves of the younger reformers in the direction of attacking vested rights and exclusiveness. It was evident that Doyle saw plainly that the old style of conciliatory resolution to the Council in the hope that they would step down from their haughty position had passed. He saw that the fight was to be to a finish, and he faced the issue boldly. He was always in the front of the attack with the weapons of wit and shrewd parliamentary manoeuvre.

In this debate Lewis Wilkins proposed an amendment to the effect that as the house recognized no religious preference in the choice of its officers, yet it was impossible that feelings of sect in the house should be gratified by having the selection of the chaplain, and as the Rev. Mr. Uniacke had discharged his duty, while in that office, with fidelity and satisfaction, the house should re-appoint him.

Mr. Doyle did not like the terms of the resolution proposed by the hon. member from the town of Windsor. He said he did not see the incompatibility between the resolution proposed by his hon. friend from the county of Halifax and that submitted by the hon. gentleman from Shelburne. He re-

puddiated the idea of adopting the old system prevailing in England in our provincial institutions.

When the new house met in 1837, on the opening day, after routine business, Mr. Doyle rose and introduced four resolutions attacking the constitution of the Legislative Council. In support of these resolutions Howe made his maiden speech in the General Assembly. These resolutions were the first direct and uncompromising frontal attack on the old order of things as it existed in Nova Scotia, and brought out the famous reply from the Council of Twelve, denying the right of the lower house to comment on its mode of procedure.

When the Council sent this defiant reply and threw down the gauntlet to the reformers, the old liberals became alarmed, and John Young, who had been the recognized leader of liberal ideas in the assembly, offered a series of conciliatory resolutions. This gave rise to the famous amendment of twelve articles offered by Mr. Howe, which comprised the confession of faith of the party in favor of "a change."

Judge Longley, in his recent "Life of Joseph Howe," gives all the credit for these resolutions to Howe, but Doyle, Huntington, William Young—the son of the mover of the conciliatory resolutions—and others had a hand in formulating this platform, though the duty of announcing its features devolved upon Howe, who sought the honor.

Without doubt Howe acquitted himself admirably in this his first attempt at leadership in a house of many older members in actual parliamentary experience. To Doyle belonged also the honor of firing an opening shot in the great battle for responsible government.

One of Doyle's jokes in the debates on the judiciary may be mentioned; he said that some members entertained very extraordinary views of the judges. One gentleman reminded him very much of a story of a Hibernian servant of the hon. Speaker (S. G. W. Archibald), who never could be prevailed upon to take hold of the bridle of a judge's horse, and on being

asked the reason said that he was very near being hanged by a judge in Ireland.

In the session of January, 1839, an election bill was prepared which gave the right to vote to all who had a clear yearly value of forty shillings in agricultural produce or other values. Mr. Morton, the member for Cornwallis, who was somewhat expansive on the claims of agriculture to the exclusion of other interests, moved an amendment intended to limit votes to those only who had a clear yearly value in agricultural produce. His amendment was to strike out the words "or other" following the word agriculture. This would shut out fishermen who produced fish to that amount or over. Mr. Doyle took exception to this and twitted Mr. Morton in a humorous way on the great stress he laid on the importance of the farmers in comparison to the fishermen and other producers. The following were the remarks of Mr. Doyle, Mr. Morton and Mr. Howe:

Mr. Doyle opposed the motion. He wondered at the attempt, to limit the franchise to those who might grow a few bushels of sour crab apples while those who produced maple sugar, or valuable quantities of fish from the rivers were to be excluded. The fisheries were said to be valuable, yet the moment any benefit was to go beyond a turnip or a parsnip, or the ridges of the agriculturist—then nothing was to be privileged but vegetables. In fact, except a man produced a certain quantity of vegetables, it would appear, that he should not be thought fit to hold a seat in that house. The sense of the house would prevent any such attempt from being successful, and would put agriculturist and fisherman on equal footing. Surely the man who took fish was entitled to equal rights with the man who raised the largest turnip. As much salmon was taken from a river in Isle Madame, as was worth more than the produce of Cornwallis—at least more than some of its best agriculturists could exhibit on farms.

Mr. Morton said that the honorable gentleman who had just spoken had talent and wit, and he was in the habit of coming into the house to show off these qualities. That seemed the extent of his legislation. He spoke of agriculture as of no consequence—and spoke of a river in Isle Madame as producing more than all Cornwallis. If Isle Madame was such a place, it was a wonder that the people there could not send one of themselves to represent them.

Mr. Doyle replied that he had no idea of assailing the hon. gentleman. If Isle Madame chose persons out of itself, it might be no harm had Cornwallis done the same. So fully had agriculture occupied the hon. gentleman's mind that he had no consideration for any other interest. If the clause were limited, as had been proposed, the poor man whose crops had been spoiled by the visitation of Providence, and who might not be able to grow the required value in agricultural produce would have his difficulties increased by a loss of franchise; also by being refused the sending of a representative to better the condition of his class.

Mr. Howe did not see why the distinction should be made. If right was confined altogether to buildings, then fishermen and farmers would be on the same footing, but the proposed alteration gave the latter a double chance. If agricultural values were to form a qualification—why not the value which the fisher produced? The hon. gentleman from Cornwallis had been repeatedly twitted about his apples—he (Mr. H.) took that opportunity of bearing testimony to their quality; he had tasted them at the hon. gentleman's farm a couple summers ago, and found them excellent. The best reason in the world could be given why the people of Isle Madame had sent his hon. friend to the house: from the nature of their occupation they were led to select an "odd fish" as their representative. The gentleman from Cornwallis as well as himself would, he was sure, be sorry to lose the wit of the hon. gentleman who represented Isle Madame, though it was sometimes directed against his side of the house.

The bill as originally proposed stood, the amendment being defeated.

The House of Assembly elected in 1843 was presided over by William Young—afterwards Sir William Young, chief justice of Nova Scotia. The following were the members of the house of assembly representing, respectively, the counties and townships. The prefix \* to the name indicates that the member in question had occupied a seat in a former parliament.

### Counties.

- Halifax—\*Joseph Howe, and Law. O'C. Doyle.  
 Colchester—\*John Ross.  
 Pictou—\*John Holmes and George R. Young.  
 Cumberland—\*Stephen Fulton, and \*R. McG. Dickey.  
 Hants—\*Benj. Smith, and Hon. L. M. Wilkins.  
 Kings—\*T. A. S. DeWolf, and Jno. C. Hall.  
 Annapolis—Hon. James W. Johnston, attorney-general.  
 Digby—Francis Bourneuf.  
 Yarmouth—\*Herbert Huntington.  
 Shelburne—Obadiah Wilson.  
 Queens—S. P. Freeman, and Jno. Campbell.  
 Lunenburg—\*John Creighton and Chas. B. Owen.  
 Sydney—George Brennan and Patrick Power.  
 Guysborough—\*W. F. DesBarres, and \*J. J. E. Marshall.  
 Cape Breton—James B. Uniacke.  
 Richmond—  
 Inverness—\*Wm. Young, and Jas. McKeagney.

### Townships.

- Halifax—\*Jas. McNab, and Andrew M. Uniacke.  
 Truro—William Flemming.  
 Onslow—\*John Crowe.  
 Londonderry—\*G. W. McLellan.  
 Pictou—\*Henry Blackadar.  
 Amherst—Thomas Logan.  
 Windsor—James D. Fraser.

Newport—Ichabod Dimock.  
 Falmouth—Elkanah Young.  
 Cornwallis—\*Mayhew Beckwith.  
 Horton—Perez M. Benjamin.  
 Granville—\*Stephen S. Thorne.  
 Annapolis—Alfred Whitman.  
 Digby—\*Charles Budd.  
 Clare—\*Anselm F. Comeau.  
 Yarmouth—\*Reuben Clements.  
 Argyle—\*John Ryder.  
 Shelburne—\*Peter Spearwater.  
 Barrington—Paul Crowell.  
 Liverpool—\*William B. Taylor.  
 Lunenburg—\*John Heckman.  
 Sydney, C. B.—\*Hon. Edmund M. Dodd.  
 Arichat, C. B.—\*Henry Martell.

It is doubtful viewing the names of the men who sat on the red benches in the early forties, whether any House of Assembly, before or since, in a larger degree represented the various features of our province: its intellectual culture, its measure of high statesmanship, and in the knowledge of its material resources from a practical participation in their development—on land and sea.

And yet not alone in the newspapers were they—all of them—most vigorously “hauled over the coals,” but even in the old matter-of-fact almanac their motives were impugned, and their want of zeal in the promotion of the public weal called in question in words that were by no means courteous. One quotation will suffice:

“Did our politicians, including of course our honorable members of the legislature, display half the zeal, and expend a tithe of the money, to enlighten and encourage agriculture, and to render the earth more prolific in the bounties of Providence, that they display and expend in the scramble for power—for office—which many grasp at but few obtain—we should

have less complaint of hard times; and we should become, what we too vauntingly boast of being already, an independent, a prosperous and happy people. There would then soon be but little occasion for young lawyers and boys running about to instruct our sturdy farmers in their interests and political duties."

The famous learned blacksmith was no fuller of "wise saws" than our oldtime weather predictor. His advice to the man who tickled the land with the plough was retailed in the almanac during each calendar month from January to December. The politician, too, was given "a bit of his mind" in the cool November, and after assuring the all-confiding farmer that he might "look for a snow storm between the 14th and 18th of December," he undertook to tell some homely truths to the "free and independent elector" after this fashion:

"He is not a *wise* man who does not know *how* to vote—nor a free man who *dares* not vote as he thinks right—nor a patriot who *will not* do so. We *want* more *practical* business men in our legislature, as well as upon our farms—men of sound judgment and independent bearing—and who, though they do not *talk* as much, can *think* and *act* as correctly and as promptly, as *professional* talkers; and who, knowing best the true interests of the country, are likely to do the least injury, if they do not do the most good. We also want a more extended circulation of agricultural periodicals—because they disseminate useful knowledge, stimulate industry, call into action latent genius, awaken laudable competition, induce general improvement, bring into exercise the noblest feelings of our fellow man."

Mr. Doyle—a Nova Scotian of Irish extraction—while loving his own land, had a tender regard for the land of his forefathers. Larry Doyle and Joe Howe knew each other from boyhood. The son of the loyal old Tory printer and the son of the Irish merchant often indulged in games—at base ball and marbles and

other sports in the not overcrowded streets of the town of their youthful days. And as they grew to manhood, and on Doyle's return from school abroad, the old intimacy was renewed, and, together, the two ambitious young men prepared to equip themselves for the strenuous battle which they were destined to wage in the cause of the people.

Howe, speaking at a banquet at the Four mile House on the completion of the first section Nova Scotia Railway, said: "Mr. Doyle and I commenced life together, and have a thousand personal social ties, which neither can readily forget. Many of the gayest and instructive of our days and nights were spent together. We spent them not in sport or wine, but in search of deep philosophy, wit, eloquence and poesy, arts which I loved, for they, my friend, were thine."

"I might say," continued Mr. Howe, "that Mr. Doyle is the only man I ever knew who had not an enemy; whose humor never flagged; whose wit never wounded; who, by common consent was everywhere welcome, and who, if immortality could be conferred by universal suffrage, everybody would vote that he would enliven every scene of festivity down to the end of time. I am quite sure if he lived so long the last trump would drown the ring of merry voices over his last jest."

No doubt the nights alluded to in the poetical quotation refer to the time when several young men of ability gathered in Howe's parlor, Doyle among the rest, to consider and write the series of clever papers, for the *Nova Scotian* entitled "The Club." They were the joint production of Howe, Haliburton (Sam Slick,) Dr. Gregor and Captain Kincaid, an officer of the Rifle Brigade then stationed at Halifax.

When Doyle first came into the House of Assembly, the vigorous attacks on the old Council (after the brandy dispute) had ceased, and a period of reaction had set in. Doyle did not fail to notice this, and in his own witty way, said of the opposition "that after six years of sin, they had entered on a year of repentance."

It was no light thing in the days of entrenched privilege for any ambitious lawyer who had his eyes set on a judgeship, to antagonize the rulers whose recommendations prevailed at the colonial office at London. The brilliant Samuel George William Archibald, keen lawyer and eloquent advocate of popular rights that he was, got quite a taste of this resentment when he sought the appointment of the chief justiceship on the resignation of the aged Sampson Blowers.

This obstruction on the part of the oligarchy had a somewhat restraining effect on the older men who saw all the plums of office go to those who defended monopoly in the lower house. But the young reformers who were of Doyle's company looked to the people for the reward which their efforts on behalf of reform deserved. Their faces were towards the morning when Doyle brought the question of the terms of the coal mines of the province to the notice of the legislature. He moved that a committee be appointed to wait upon his honor the President (in the absence of the Lieutenant-Governor through ill health) and request him to order the proper officers to lay before the house copies of such documents and papers as related to the tenure of the coal mines of this province.

Thus it will be seen that Doyle was the first of the reformers to take a practical step in the direction of freeing the mines and minerals from the grasp of the creditors of the Duke of York, to whom they had been assigned. Though it fell to the lot of others, in the late fifties, to carry the project of gaining control of the minerals of the province to a consummation, it should not be forgotten that Doyle was one of the pioneers in the movement.

In the judiciary debate Mr. Doyle differed from his brother reformers in upholding the court of Common Pleas, and in defending its usefulness for the trial of minor criminal and other causes. S. G. W. Archibald, some years earlier, was the chief advocate for the establishment of this court, and had considerable trouble in getting it established—the motion only pass-

ing by one vote. Extra expenditure for judicial purposes was unpopular at that day, as the salaries bore heavily on the scant revenue of the province. The court was afterwards abolished by the reformers, but time has since proved that a court of this description was a necessity. The present county courts abundantly illustrate this fact.

On the debate on this question Doyle jocosely referred to the member for Londonderry, as inducing a belief that the contents of a jury box operated ten times worse than a box of Morrison's pills, and that lawyers were represented as traveling about like so many surgeons for the sole purpose of bleeding the country. He further remarked that "it is well known there was no chancery court in some of the United States and the reason sometimes assigned to account for that circumstance was: that the chancellor of England was said to be the keeper of the king's conscience, and as the Americans had imported very little of that commodity in their transit, they of course required no expensive officer to take care of it.

Captain J. Kincaid, who was named as one of the members of the "club," was one of the thirteen officers of the Rifle Brigade who had fought at Waterloo and came to this garrison with the Rifles in 1829. The list comprised the colonel commanding—Sir Colin Campbell, who was Col. of the Royal Scottish; major-general Sir A. F. Barnard; colonel A. G. R. Norton, lieut.-col.; majors W. Eeles and Joseph Logan; and captains W. Johnston, A. Stewart, J. C. Hope, J. Molloy, J. Kincaid, G. Simmons; quarter-master Wm. Hill, and asst. surgeons M. J. Bramly and R. McN. Robertson.

"The Club" was an institution whose proceedings created quite a stir in the social and political circles of the period. Captain Kincaid, its inspiring genius, had gallantly won his spurs on the field of battle, and he was as modest as he was brave. Intellectually, too, he was a foeman worthy of anybody's steel. When the Rifles were called away from Halifax no one in the regiment felt a keener regret in leaving our shores.

As soon as he reached London he wrote a letter to "The club"—a communication full of interest then, and none the less so, I will venture to say, at even this distance of time. I shall re-produce it:

London, Dec., 1829.

My Dear Boys,—What would I not give to be with you for as long a time as it will take me to write this letter, or you to read it. Forgive the tears by which the paper is stained; they are genuine, true hearted drops of sorrow at the reflection that the great noisy, ungovernable Atlantic is rolling between us,—and that while you are still enabled to enjoy the pleasures of friendly converse, I am, though in the midst of a crowded city, more like a banished man than a fortunate soldier, called home by the voice of his King. But—bah! why should I make you sad with my sorrow.

Pray write to me by every chance, and let me know what is doing in America, more particularly what is doing in Halifax, and most particularly what is doing in the club. I get the papers regularly, but can find no trace of it in them; surely you have not abandoned the country to its fate, and withdrawn from the management of its affairs. Now that I have quit the corner, should you quit the club, the town will run riot for want of proper censorship. Charles\*—told me the other day that somebody tied a crape round the old gun the morning after I sailed, but split me if I believe him.

It is not yet determined whether I go to Russia or India; I have had several flattering interviews with the Duke, and have given him my opinion freely on the details submitted to my consideration. I find Sir James is a great favorite, but, as you may suppose, I frankly dropped a shot into his pocket, respecting the old affair. Before you hear next from me, I may be traversing the steps of Isim, or coasting along the shores of the Caspian, or it is not improbable that my next epistle may be dated at Constantinople; for you must know, but breathe it not even in The Club, that since the conquest of Tur-

---

\*A reference, no doubt, to the Hon. Charles R. Fairbanks then in London.

key, the government here begin to be apprehensive that sooner or later an attack will be made upon our eastern possessions; and are determined to collect the fullest information that can be gathered, respecting the countries lying between the company's territories and the dominions of the Czar.

I have been in the east, you know, and having got pretty well seasoned to the climate, and a little acquainted with the language and manners of the people, the Duke is kind enough to say that there is not a man in the army better fitted for the service than myself. But, whether I shall go direct to Constantinople, and, passing through Asia Minor look in upon the Tartars and Chinese, and then examine the nature of the ground, and estimate the natural defences of Hindostan; or whether I shall set out on a three years' journey through Russia, in order to measure the actual dimensions, moral and physical, of the giant of the north, and impart the result of my observations to our Cabinet, has yet to be determined by the great Captain of the Age; however, of this you may be assured, that, go where I may, I will endeavor to tip you a stave under cover of the Foreign office, and to pick up every queer thing that comes in my way to amuse you with at my return.

Who do you think called to see me the other day—no less a personage than old Blackwood the bookseller. I thought the fellow was mad, he treated me with so much deference and respect. After some hesitation he disclosed the object of his visit, by saying that Galt who, you know, was lately in Canada, having brought home a file of the Nova Scotian, he had read with amazement several numbers of the club; and as professor Wilson was getting along into years, and O'Doherty had somewhat impaired his faculties by hard drinking, he would either pay down a large sum per annum for the copyright of our reports, or, if the whole club would remove to Edinburgh, he would use his purse and influence to forward our fortunes, and make us ample compensation for every sacrifice. The Doctor, he said, he could introduce at once to a most respectable and lucrative practice; Halliday, after his admission to the Scotch

bar, should have the entire management of all his law business, and Barrington, when not otherwise engaged, might write light articles for *Maga*, at a handsome salary—or publish a volume a year of prose or verse on his own account, which, by the aid of extensive bookselling connexions, he could make eminently profitable.

Having disposed of you all, he next, after apologizing for making so free, assured me that, as his politics had always been orthodox, and as he had always supported the high Tory interest, he could, merely for an able article at a particular juncture, secure me a regiment, and perhaps, at no distant day, get the major exalted to the rank of a major-general! Faith, I roared in his face, and assured him that in one month after I communicated his proposal, our friend the editor would post off to Scotland and run him through the body.

By the way, did you hear his majesty's last pun. The Duke of Cumberland was exclaiming, in the presence of his royal brother, against the reports that had got into the papers of his sight being seriously affected: "Poh!" said the sovereign, "I do not care a turn of Conyngham's ankle; such reports are *all in my eye!*" I tried to get out of the duke the probable state of the boundary question, the other day. He shrugged up his shoulders, and said "he did not think Sir Howard was just the man he would have selected for the service—he had a great deal too much talk; he did not come at once to the point, and when he did he seldom stuck to it. He writes, too (added he), as though he got paid by the acre, and if his father taught us to break *lines*, his son is the very devil at forming them."

Fairbanks, as you know, is here—and has, I believe, talked the government out of £20,000, and will, I have little doubt, persuade the bulls and bears in the money market to turn into jackasses and lend him 30 more. He swears that opening a passage into the Grand Lake will be of as much importance to the commercial world as the free navigation of the Black Sea, and is about to issue a document, similar in

size and style to that put forth by the Russian minister, and which, I have no hesitation in saying, will be just as free from humbug.

There has been a singular sensation created in the city by some having set afloat a report that the government was about to send out an order to prevent smugglers from holding seats in the colonial assemblies. You must know that since the enactment of the tariff the British manufacturers console themselves with the reflection that their goods still find a market in the States, through the agency of your provincial violators of republican law—and this report coming to their ears, they began to quake, lest by setting such a stigma on a beneficial pursuit, the practice of smuggling would be entirely discontinued and their goods left to moulder on their hands. A meeting was accordingly held at the City Tavern, and a strong and spirited remonstrance forwarded to the foot of the throne, for the recall of the obnoxious despatch, which, said the petitioners, will bring ruin and distress on many an industrious and skilful manufacturer, and force them and their families to rely on the eleemosynary pittance of the parish officers rather than on their own exertions, for a support."

For the present, farewell—I hope to hear from you before I leave England, and trust that by the next arrival I shall receive a series of reports from that *body* in which my *soul* is centred.

Your ever faithful

Major.

*Doctor*.—By my faith, excellent—every word of it in his old vein; fill up, and let us pledge our friend in a bumper, before we turn to other topics.

*Haliday*.—That we will, for who knows while we are grasping our *cups*, but he may have hold of a *Khan* in Tartary.

*Barrington*.—O! should he go no further than Turkey, he may chance to fall in with *A-Stray-Can* (Astrachan).

*Doctor*,—The subject is too serious for punning. The next news may be melancholy enough, and instead of drinking a bumper to his health we may have to fire three rounds over his memory.

Captain Kincaid, a friend of Doyle's, was one of Wellington's men. He marched from the lines of Torres Vedras to Toulouse, and was engaged in all the famous battles that pushed back Napoleon's generals from the plains of Spain and finally across the Pyrenees into France. At twenty-one years of age in 1809 he volunteered into the second battalion of the 95th Rifles, which formed a part of the famous Light Division. He was born at Dalkeith near Falkirk! Kincaid kept guard in the great hill defences of the Torres Vedras and afterward joined in the pursuit of Marshal Massena's army. He stormed the slippery rocks of Ciudad Rodrigo, and led the forlorn hope in that wild assault that took Badajos and also took part in all the battles of these years from Fuentes to Vittoria. He served in the stubborn and bloody combats which took place in the Pyrenees. On the return of Napoleon from the Island of Elba, he crossed over to Belgium with the British Army and was present at Quatre Bras. and on the ridge of Waterloo. His battalion stood almost in the centre of Wellington's battle line on that world-famous day and was engaged in the most desperate fights that eddied around the British centre.

Kincaid was a gallant soldier and played a gallant part in the great events, but his promotion was slow. He only obtained a captain's commission in 1826. He was more fortunate indeed after he left the army than when he served in it. He was given a promotion in the Yeomanry Guard in 1844 and was knighted in 1852 and died in 1862 aged seventy-six years.

Captain Kincaid wrote a book entitled "Adventures in the 95th Regiment" which gives a splendid idea of the famous light division of the Duke's army in Spain and at Waterloo.

At no period in the history of journalism in Halifax was there less regard for the proprieties in dealing with the conduct of public men than between the years 1840 and 1860. Correspondents were given unbridled license; and even the leading articles, for which the editor was more directly responsible, teemed with abuse and, in the language of the ring, there was, too often, "a blow below the belt."

In the career of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, there was a peculiar incident which grew out of a sharp attack made on this then prominent actor on the political stage by a writer who evidently had little regard for truth, and whose partisanship betrayed him into the use of harsh and unjustifiable language. The outcome of his attacks on Larry Doyle brought the latter into collision with the publisher—a gentleman of the old school who will be remembered by some yet in our midst as being singularly inoffensive in his character—an editorial writer whose "leaders" indicated much cultured thought, and a thorough grasp of the questions then agitating the public mind—at home and abroad.

There were a good many threatened "horse-whippings" of the men who wielded the slashing pen—and occasionally "coffee and pistols for two"—in those old days, but in many cases the irate individual who ventured to visit the printing office for the purpose of administering chastisement, unceremoniously left "with a flea in his ear." The details of those bellicose encounters, during the forties, would fill a good-sized volume. Doyle had difficulties with the editor, who had, unwittingly, given an ill-tempered vituperator too free access to the columns of his otherwise well-censored newspaper.

During the exciting days of 1839, when the debate in the legislature ran high on the despatches received from Lord Glenelg, the secretary for the colonies, the *Times*, the organ

of the party that defended the old Council, made a bitter attack on the character of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, under cover of "Plain Dealer"—an anonymous correspondent.

That the base of the attack had no foundation in fact was very generally recognized, and that Doyle found himself in honor bound to bring the writer to a retraction of his false statements, or, failing in this, to hold the publisher of the libel responsible, was an accepted fact. Doyle had a shrewd suspicion as to the identity of "Plain Dealer"—an individual in the community who was known to be, unlike the mythological deity, vulnerable in more spots than in his right heel.

Acting on this view, Doyle addressed himself to the editor, William Gossip, and requested to be furnished with the name of his correspondent. The request was refused, but with courtesy. Doyle then demanded an apology from the editor, but that which was offered was imperfect and unsatisfactory. Accompanied by a friend, a young Mr. Twining, his law partner, Doyle sought Gossip at his printing office. He carried with him a dog whip. The editor was not "at home." The belligerents then crossed the grand parade to Argyle street, expecting to find Gossip in a house where he was supposed to reside. They were told that he had removed to another quarter of the town.

The following day Gossip went to the Province Building at Doyle's request, and the latter invited him into the Speaker's room. After some preliminaries, Doyle asked Gossip if he was willing to give up the name of the "Plain Dealer" letter. Gossip replied that, in his opinion, the apologies he had already sent should be accepted in full of all grievances. To this, Doyle, with much indignation, said that he did not consider the alleged apologies at all satisfactory and, standing up, he exclaimed with emphasis: "once for all, will you give up the author?"

The *Times* editor, who could not be worked into a frenzy, refused to yield further in the matter. Then Doyle declared

that but one other course remained and, suiting the action to the word, he opened the door of the room and took a horse-whip from his coat pocket, and threateningly raised it. As quick as a flash Gossip caught the whip by the middle and as quickly put the other hand in the breast of his coat—an act which gave Doyle the impression that his opponent had a pistol. Assuming an attitude of defiance, Doyle exclaimed; “fire and be — to you.” The reply of Gossip was: “no! I’ll not fire,” and then sought to appease Doyle by saying that if he would only tell him what he really wanted he would try to meet his wishes in every particular. He then let go his hold of the whip.

Doyle, becoming calmer, said that all he required was the name of the author of the abusive communication. He entertained no personal ill-feeling towards the publisher, but he had been grossly vilified in his paper, and he was determined to have adequate satisfaction. Gossip, impressed by Doyle’s intense earnestness, promised to inform “Plain Dealer” of the unpleasantness that had taken place and, at the same time, he gave the assurance that an answer would be forthcoming in the morning. The parties then separated, Doyle, with his whip carefully stowed away in his pocket, going into the House of Assembly, and Gossip betaking himself to his office to consider the next step. Matters, however, moved too slow for Doyle, and as a last resort to avenge his injured honor—for he felt most keenly the contemptible insinuations flung at him—he called Gossip “out,” but the latter:

Bold in the council board,  
But cautious in the field, he shunn’d the sword.

You will, no doubt, be interested in an extract from “Plain Dealer’s letter: “During the sitting of the legislature its proceedings generally attract my first attention, and I cannot express my alarm and indignation which the debates on the despatches excited in my bosom. I am a moderate man, sir, and though the northern blasts may not blow as coldly upon

us in Halifax, as they do upon the good folks of Cumberland, yet I do believe that I can view things in general as coolly as any inhabitant of that old county.

But when I began to feel the prickling of Mr. Huntington's bayonets—when I heard our town Bell (a flippant allusion to the Hon. Hugh Bell) sound the alarm that the people of Nova Scotia were to be treated as step-children; when I heard Mr. Morton, who yields to none for loyalty, declare that our hopes were wholly annihilated, and that the loyalty of the people would be endangered by printing such despatches; when I saw even that moderate Mr. Lewis become 'somewhat indignant,' and that Mr. Goudge could listen to such documents without grating the nap off the seat of his pantaloons upon the red benches, that even the *temperance of Mr. Doyle was so much overcome that it was with difficulty he could keep his seat.*"—then of course "Plain Dealer's" blood began to boil.

And then again the carping writer in the course of the criticism of the debates wrote, "*let temperate Mr. Doyle totter in his seat.*" In the issue of the Times following the publication of "Plain Dealer's letter, the editor himself was heard from. He said: "the messenger of the assembly brought a message from the house that Mr. Doyle was waiting. We therefore stepped over and were ushered into the Speaker's room. To our surprise there were present Huntington, Goudge, Doyle and Twining. Our first impression was that the house had appointed a committee to enquire into matters connected with printing, or that they had sent us a vote of thanks by the hon. members present for the able manner in which the *Times* was conducted."

After recounting the incident of the dog whip in substantially the same terms as those made public by Doyle, the editor grew bold. He was now in the secure precincts of the sanctum and took high ground. In the concluding paragraph of his statement he went on to say: "conduct like this



**HON. HERBERT HUNTINGTON.**

(From Bourinot's "Builders of Nova Scotia.")



shall never put us down; personal hostility will not succeed in making us forget our duty to the public. As we have done so will we continue to do; and with a sincere desire to live peaceably and follow our vocation without offence, never intentionally reflecting upon the personal or private character of any. No power on earth shall prevent us from steadily pursuing the political course which we conceive best adapted for the public welfare, or from exposing the errors by every proper means at our disposal, of that which we think has an opposite tendency."

An impartial reader will not consider the editor's lofty tone to be, at all events, over frank. It strikes one at this later day that the attack was of a personal nature, as it reflected on Doyle's well-known convivial habits—going so far as to insinuate that he appeared in the house in a condition which laid him open to a just criticism. Be that as it may, in dealing with the noble-hearted Larry Doyle his political enemies sometimes failed to be guided by the generous sentiment contained in the oft-quoted couplet:

Be to our virtues over-kind,  
And to our faults a little blind.

Thus far I have endeavored to show Lawrence O'Connor Doyle in his public capacity as a member of a band of advanced liberals in the struggle for greater political freedom. Doyle's aim as a member of the House of Assembly was for responsible government—pure and simple. He clearly saw the goal and, so far as he was concerned, he was bound to reach it. Others tarried by the way.

In the early stages of the contest with Sir Colin Campbell, Howe was disposed to "rest on his arms!" On the other hand Doyle and Huntington and some others resolved to carry the fight to a complete finish. Their plan of action was, subsequently, adopted by Howe, and led to the triumphs which have contributed so much to make his name famous in the annals of our own land—and throughout the wide Dominion.

Turning to Doyle I find him again, after ten years, with his friend and opponent, James B. Uniacke, as president and vice-president, respectively, of the Charitable Irish Society, presiding at the function in honor of St. Patrick's day—1839. That year the anniversary fell on Sunday, but Monday—Shelah's day, as it is called in old Ireland—was set apart for the celebration. A large company was present at Mason Hall. The evening was given up to mirth and festivity.

It was a source of pleasure to see two men of brilliant talents, but then of opposite political principles, thus presiding over the gathering of a society whose object was to promote good fellowship—and to aid the needy. On the occasion mentioned the band of the 23rd Welsh fusiliers furnished the music. The 23rd had been in Halifax in 1776, sixty-three years before, when Sir William Howe and the British army retired from Boston. The boundary dispute between the State of Maine and New Brunswick was then at its height, and it looked as if the 23rd would again be called into active service—to take a hand in a scrap with old-time foes. Happily for all concerned wise councils prevailed, and the vexed question was amicably settled by Arbitration. At the St. Patrick's celebration a Mr. Alexander McDougall sang a song in rather a jingo strain, composed by himself, which indicated public feeling at that time.

Doyle was a very warm admirer of Daniel O'Connell. He ardently loved the home of his fathers, and took active steps to secure for the great agitator financial aid to continue his efforts in obtaining justice for Ireland. At a repeal meeting held in Halifax in 1843 at the Exchange Coffee house, Doyle was chosen president; M. Mahoney, vice, and Bernard O'Neil, secretary. The proceedings occupied from 7 to 11 o'clock in the evening. The meeting closed with cheers for the Queen, for O'Connell, and for the chairman of the meeting.

The Nova Scotia repeal league sent £200 as a contribution to the agitation in Ireland, and £400 in charity. Speak-

ing of this the *Boston Pilot* said: "the Catholic population of Nova Scotia is not half so much as that of Boston, nor one-eighth of New York. Yet that population has done more in three months for creed and country, for repeal and temperance, than either New York or Boston. This is no doubt in a great measure owing to the fact of having such clergymen as Fathers O'Brien and Loughnan, and such laymen as Lawrence O'Connor Doyle."

When Lawrence O'Connor Doyle returned to the house of assembly in 1844—representing Halifax—the forces of the government and opposition were arrayed in fierce party struggle over the retirement of Howe, McNab and James B. Uniacke from the executive council. Party feeling throughout the province ran high, and Lord Falkland was conspicuously dragged into the conflict. Howe had given offence to some of his more ardent supporters by accepting office without a more decided change in the executive council, and, after a brief period, realizing the mistake he had made on joining a government which had stopped short of the fundamental principles of responsible government, he endeavored to heap *all* the blame upon the lieutenant-governor and his remaining councillors.

During the session of 1844 the "red benches" witnessed many keen encounters, and although in the long and fierce debate on the address Doyle contributed his share in the support of his party, his good nature did not desert him, as the following extracts from his speech on the occasion will exemplify:

Mr Doyle said: "I much fear, Mr. Chairman, that with this gloomy, dark day, with its discouraging influences, my own temperament not a little sympathises, and as I can add nothing to the novelty of this exhaustive debate, I may felicitate myself in hoping to contribute anything to the force of the argument. Worn-wearied as the committee are, it were almost presumption thus to rise with any expectation of enlivening

an audience or animating its now languid energies. Still, sir, at so critical a period all consciousness of inefficiency ceases to exist within the bosom, lest silence should be mistaken for insensibility.

“Four years have elapsed over the legislative labors of this province, and during the interval I have stood aloof of your deliberations. An essential change, I had read, was in action—a new and benefical system of provincial policy had marked the period in the annals of our country, as an epoch; such was the event, I was taught to believe, that would hereafter to the student of our history distinguish the period under notice, as a discovery of proud and exultant commendation. How far these fond opinions of mine have been verified the experience of this discussion unhappily demonstrates.

“I now come to the remarks of my honorable and learned friend (Andrew Uniacke), member for the township of Halifax, and, Mr. chairman, pardon me if I feel emotion. In the chambers of his lamented father, I, a mere youth, was first taught to pore over the rudiments of that knowledge whose rich stores were by him accumulated as treasures to be left as legacies to those children who are now ornaments of this house, and it was under his teaching I was first taught to think of, and to appreciate, the value of those principles this day in controversy. He, with a mind capacious enough to comprehend systems of more enlarged policy than those to which narrower ones then dedicated their idolatry—with a spirit ardently inspired to covet and to claim these benefits for this country; he, the venerated father of my hon. friend, ere I was yet a week under his vigilance and his care, imposed on me the duty of transcribing a voluminous essay of suggestion to the home government—even then, years ago, redolent, in every page, of the spirit now struggling to animate the languid constitution of this country.

“My hon. friend has reminded us that the President of the Council, the senior member of the executive, was one con-

spicuous for his popular principles, and strove in the scenes of our past history for the privileges of the people. In passing without further comment from the animated observations of my learned friend, I have to only add that the opinions attributed to the distinguished individual have been so long forgotten by himself that the public cannot remember them."

Doyle's reply to Dodd's speech was sharp and incisive: his retort of the fair pensionary spinsters who got on the list by Dodd's advocacy was not much relished by that gentleman. Nor was his description of Dodd's usurping the prerogative of the crown. When, he said, he uprose in the house crying havoc and declared war against the state of Maine the auditors in the gallery cheered in sympathy, while we, the representatives of the people, catching the military infection, vociferated for a leader until the powder exploding from the curls of the Speaker's wig, the very timber on the Aroostook trembled and Maine shrunk back in affright.

Doyle twitted Lewis M. Wilkins, whose speeches on all public occasions were brimful of classical quotations. The stately Wilkins had been a member of the Legislative Council. Doyle described him as descending from the dormitory of genius in the other hall—having hung his colonial coronet on some vacant peg to rust or rot, and, doffing the robes of a provincial peer, come down once more to battle as a burgess for popular privileges.

Journalism, in the days of the battle for responsible government, did not display the amenities that have been observed in a calmer and more recent period of its history. Appeals to the law courts were more frequent than they are today, and conflicts with the pen sometimes led to personal encounters on the streets of the town. The law, too often, got its iron heel on the editor's neck, but, like a well-trained pugilist, he never failed to send his enemy "groggy" to the corner whenever he ventured to attack him in the open arena.

In 1840 Lawrence O'Connor Doyle was one of the counsel in a suit that was brought by Edmund Ward, a sort of waspish representative of the weekly press, against English and Blackadar, the proprietors of the *Acadian Recorder*. The case was of some interest: its merits were as follows:

Sometime in 1838, a person of the name of Duncan, arrived in Halifax. Shortly afterwards an article appeared in the Fredericton *Sentinel* of which Ward was the editor, describing the said Duncan as a swindler, and cautioning the public to be on their guard against him. Duncan saw the article and at once wrote an answer to it, which was inserted in the *Acadian Recorder*. The answer denied the charge made in the *Sentinel* and in strong terms declared Ward to be a swindler, cheat and prone to quarreling. On this the action was brought—damages laid at £1000.

The solicitor general of Nova Scotia—J. W. Johnston—who appeared for Ward, opened the case briefly to the jury. The alleged libel was read. Mr. Doyle, for the defendants, argued that the chief term in the libel, swindler, was not of itself actionable, unless used in connection with the trade or profession of the party to whom it was applied. The chief justice—Brenton Halliburton—overruled the objection. There was a difference, his lordship explained, between words spoken hastily, and words deliberately written. Not only was the charge of swindling libellous, but any moral charge, anything turning a party into contempt and ridicule, could be so construed.

James B. Uniacke also appeared for the defendants. He argued that the liberty of the press was of much consequence, and tended to prevent the growth of many evils. It was a peculiar feature of the case under consideration that the press sought to control the press. The plaintiff should not complain if words which he had used against another were thrown back on himself.

Witnesses were called to prove that Mr. Ward, while conducting, in Halifax, the *Free Press*—a publication of the twenties—was inclined to be quarrelsome and had become involved in several angry disputes. This evidence amounted to very little, and was taken no notice of by the court. As the plea was “not guilty” the defence of justification was not made.

The solicitor general addressed the court in no mincing words. The case had assumed a more serious aspect, he said, than when opened by the counsel for the defence arguing that the intention of parties was of consequence in alleged libels. The libel was a violent slander. It was not such a reply as an aggrieved party should have been allowed to publish. Persons might give opinions of others, without fear of legal consequences, as for example, when they were legally acting—such as a person giving a character of a servant, a relative or a commercial correspondent, stating opinions of a third party, a reporter furnishing proceedings of the house of parliament or courts of law. The case before the court was different. The publication of a libel by the plaintiff by no means privileged the defendants to publish another. It would have been an insult to plaintiff to have laid special damages. Who doubted that a man would be damaged in his feelings and family and daily avocation by such charges going abroad in a widely circulated paper?

The chief justice charged against the defendants in an address of considerable length. The jury (special) brought in a verdict for the plaintiff, awarding the damages at £40, with expenses. The defendants, on their part, lashed the solicitor general with great fury. So far as the latter was concerned it took the printers several years to recover their equanimity in criticising his public conduct.

Mr. Doyle's law office was on Granville Street, at Cleveland's corner (Sackville and Granville streets, northeast cor-

ner). His partner was Mr. Twining—the same gentleman who, as his friend, accompanied him in the affair with editor Gossip, of the *Times*.

A feature of Doyle's public career, at this period, may be mentioned. Not long after Lord Falkland's assumption of the lieut.-governorship the House of Assembly was dissolved, and the members had to go back to their constituencies for re-election—Doyle among the number. Several candidates were in the field for the honor of representing Cape Breton Island. These were James B. Uniacke, Doyle, William Young, McKeagney and Martell. Doyle lost his seat and was out of parliament until 1843.

On the 6th of October, 1840, five of the old Council retired, thereby paving the way for a coalition government. The executive was composed of S. G. W. Archibald, J. B. Uniacke, Joseph Howe, J. W. Johnston and James McNab. Joining the coalition was viewed by the stalwart reformers as one of those peculiar errors of judgment which characterized Howe's career. It should be stated, however that Howe vigorously maintained that the end would certainly justify the means employed to reach it. William Young, for one, berated Howe for going into the coalition.

Doyle was without a seat in the new house, and although he did not approve of Howe's action with respect to stopping short in the main pursuit of the reforms, which the Liberal party had set out to accomplish, he still continued his friend. A very sad domestic affliction was experienced by Doyle in 1842. His wife died on the first of February of that year. The obituary notice reads as follows:

“On Monday last after a long and tedious illness, Sarah Ann, consort of L. O'Connor Doyle, Esq., and eldest daughter of the last Lieut. Driscoll, Royal Navy, aged 27 years.”

As one of the representative Catholics of Halifax, Mr. Doyle took an active part in all movements which had for their pur-



**THE HON. JAMES MacNAB, (1792-1871.)**  
**(Late Colonel (1842) 1st Halifax Regiment.)**



pose the advancement of his co-religionists in the community. In 1843 he presided at the annual dinner of the Irish Society. On this occasion twenty-six toasts were drunk, among which was one to the memory of the father of the Society, the late Honorable Richard John Uniacke, and another to the poet Thomas Moore.

The Society lost one of its past presidents in 1843, who had been on the role of membership in the eighteenth century. The late Hon. Michael Tobin was born in Halifax. He was educated here where neither means nor institutions of learning were so abundant as at his decease, and when Catholics especially were denied the same free access to the fountains of religion and literature which the more enlightened spirit of the present age affords.

Doyle's admiration for O'Connell grew in intensity. He was a most outspoken believer in repeal of the Union. He was a member of the branch association of Nova Scotia, and through his efforts large sums of money were remitted to aid the liberator in his struggle for justice for Ireland. Howe did not believe in repeal, and was forced by the opposition press to declare his position on this question. The Irishmen of Halifax who were his early friends and formed the nucleus of the early reform party often invited him to be present at their public meetings to advance the repeal movement. They respected his honest convictions and found no fault with his views on the question of repeal.

In 1844 Doyle acted as chairman at a repeal meeting in which the following resolutions were offered and carried: Resolved that the people of Ireland, having in vain made every effort to obtain equal justice and equal rights from the Imperial Parliament, the meeting is of the opinion that repeal of the legislative union between Great Britain and Ireland is now the only measure by which the wrongs of that oppressed and misgoverned country can be redressed.

In the session of 1844 the government brought down a civil list bill which was attacked vigorously by the opposition. The measure, before it passed, was considerably shorn of its main features by a number of amendments in committee. The debates on the bill were carried on with much heat. Mr. Dodd (afterwards judge), replied to Howe. In the course of his speech he made some sneering remarks about the opposition which were warmly resented by Mr. Doyle, who said "The term was not original to the honorable and learned gentleman; it had been used on the floor of the house by one whose fame was not limited to the soil of which he was a native, and who did not apply the term to the honest intelligent constituents of the member for the county of Halifax, he applied it to other kinds of meetings which had now received the approval and protection of Lord Falkland's government; one of the members at least, who if they had submitted the bill before the committee in a manner consistent with the expression in the opening speech would not only be a wreck but blown off the surface, not by a side wind but a wind blown from all sides.

That gentleman spoke of the late Metcalf meeting which he (Mr. D.) admitted possessed a portion of the opulence and intelligence of the community, but when he heard it asserted that they were justified in their proceeding it became him to make some reply.

Hon. Mr. Dodd denied that he or the government had given any opinion respecting the meeting. He spoke of it, whether justified or not, as having a right to express views on political questions. Mr. Doyle said that he would not have spoken only for the eulogy which the hon. and learned member had paid to the meeting, and only that he seemed to throw the shield of government over the proceedings.

Mr. Dodd explained that he alluded to the meeting in reference to what the member for Halifax (Mr. Howe), had said on the subject, and stated that the government had nothing to do with the matter.

Mr. Doyle answered that he did not know what the member for the county of Halifax said on the subject. He was not responsible for the remarks of that gentleman; but the remarks of the member for Sydney had given him grounds to state the feeling of the Halifax constituency and of every constituency in the Province at the heinous charge made against them at that meeting. Old slang and slanders had been revived and a portion of the people had been denounced as little better than so many rebels. He heard members of the house speak of the meeting with indignation and the feeling was extensively participated in by a large majority of the people. To speak boastingly of loyalty was as out of place among a British people, as for a female to boast of virtue. It might be supposed that a parade would not be made on the subject, except parties were liable to suspicion. The member for Sydney described the member for the county of Halifax as having been the head of a party which had hunted up grievances. The member for Sydney might be justified in making the taunt because that party had defeated the government of which the hon. and learned gentleman was a member in a former House of Assembly. Whether the grievances were real or not, whether they were founded in error or not, the decisions of the British cabinet told the people of Nova Scotia that the result should be the present constitution of the province. If that government had not hunted up grievances, that gentleman and his colleagues would not now be embarrassed with the story of constitutional government. They would not be standing in self-defence saying to the house that if they should be defeated they would retire; they had been defeated repeatedly on former occasions—on the principle of he who fights and runs away may live to fight another day, which another day the house never saw.

The Johnston government, which resisted the final assaults of responsible government, appealed to the people in 1847. The election went against them. Mr. Johnston held on to power until the next meeting of the legislature.

The House met on the 22nd of January, 1848. On the election of Speaker the strength of each party was tested. William Young, Liberal, received 28 votes and the nominee of the late government 21.

The new government was composed of the following gentlemen; James Boyle Uniacke, leader of the government and Attorney-General, Joseph Howe, Provincial Secretary and clerk of the Council, Hugh Bell, James McNab, Herbert Huntington, William F. DesBarres, solicitor general, Lawrence O'C. Doyle and G. R. Young.

The new government had to carry into effect the details of responsible government: the casual and territorial revenues, the appointment of judges and the payment of their salaries, the management of the postal service, the appointment of all civil servants and other matters relinquished by the Imperial government and assumed by the Provincial government.

The change involved considerable labour and made heavy demands on the patience of the executive, who had assumed a new responsibility, and transferred power from the hands of a few into many.

In all this shaping of government on the lines of absolute responsibility of the executive to the people, Doyle took a prominent part. He had striven for the object from the first days of his entering parliament with undeviating zeal, and the reward of his labours throughout all the fierce struggles of his undaunted youth seemed now to be at his hand.

On Thursday, December 7th, 1854, Hon. Attorney-General (Young) moved a resolution in reference to the Crimean war, and relief of the women and children who were left widows and orphans by the battle at Alma. The Hon. J. W. Johnston seconded the resolution. The Attorney-General in the course of his remarks said "Among these men, Sir, who are engaged in a

momentous war are some Nova Scotians, and it may be that hereafter we shall read with a thrill of pride as a matter of history that the colors of one regiment at least were led up by a Nova Scotian, who shed his blood on the field of Alma, mingled with that of the Englishmen, Irishmen and Scotchmen who suffered to win that brilliant victory. L. O'Connor Doyle said: It may be rather a singular coincidence, sir, but it is quite likely that when representative of Her Majesty receives the address conveying the substance of the resolution just moved he may be occupying the same apartment in which the young officer was born, who has been spoken of as bearing the colors of a regiment on the heights of Alma, as His Excellency is at present sojourning in the late residence of Col. Bazalgette.

Captain Bazalgette the young officer Doyle referred to, went through the Crimean campaign, and afterwards that of the Indian Mutiny with distinguished credit. He came back in his old age married, and settled down in Halifax. His last camping ground is in Camp Hill cemetery where a plain marble head stone records his services to the empire.

Lawrence O'Connor Doyle retired from the Uniacke Government in 1851. He continued to represent the township of Halifax until May, 1855, when a general election took place. The Liberal convention met at Masonic Hall on the 30th April, 1855, for the purpose of nominating candidates. The honorable Attorney-General (Young), was in the chair, and George A. Paw acted as secretary.

John Esson and William Annand were nominated to represent the county of Halifax, and Benjamin Wier and John Tobin the township of Halifax in the Liberal interest. The latter was nominated by Conrod West and Francis Munro of Portuguese Cove.

John Tobin who thus succeeded Doyle in the representation of Halifax city was the founder of the firm of John Tobin and

company, one of the largest wholesale grocers now doing business in the Maritime Provinces.

The last note we hear of Doyle in a public capacity is contained in the following card:

**To the Electors of the Township of Halifax.**

Gentlemen:—

Understanding from conversations with personal friends this morning that impressions have gone abroad that I am to be brought forward as a candidate for your suffrages at the ensuing election with my own assent, I now beg leave most distinctly to say that under no circumstance will I now come forward. I will say further that to all gentlemen nominated at the liberal meeting holden on Monday evening last, I will accord my most cheerful and earnest support.

I have the honor to remain, with a grateful sense of past obligations,

Your obedient servant,

**L. O'Connor Doyle.**

Halifax May 2nd, 1855.

Mr. Doyle's fame rests in the popular imagination to a goodly extent on his wit and humour and on his fascinating manners. These qualities gave him peculiar influence in the society of his friends. His kindly temper endeared him to all who came within the sphere of his genial disposition. So long as these qualities were displayed in the sight of the community his fame was secure. So long as even the memory of these qualities lingered with the men who had known him there was a warm corner in their hearts for the gifted "Larry Doyle," who had so charmingly mellowed down the bitter asperities of the public life of his active days.

But when his contemporaries gradually died off—when two generations had passed away since his voice had been heard his reputation rested on mere tradition. Later political arrangements had been completed which threw more and more the local affairs of Nova Scotia into the background until the memories of the men who played such a signal part in the reform movement had become but faded reminiscences.

Laurence O'Connor Doyle in the late fifties of the last century removed to New York, where one of his sisters resided who had married a Mr. Burke, father of Mrs. Thomas Kenny, of Thornvale, North West Arm, Halifax. Mrs. Kenny's mother who was Mr. Burke's first wife was a Roosevelt.

Mr. Doyle died in New York.



## NOTES ON SEVERAL GOVERNORS AND THEIR INFLUENCE.

By **JOSEPH HOWE.**

Nothing could be more correct and refining than the tone given to society by Lady Dalhousie who, without being handsome was remarkable for the plainness of her dress and the elegant simplicity of her manners. The Earl was a square built, good looking man, with hair rather grey when I last saw him. He took great interest in Agriculture, and was the patron of "Agricola" whose letters appeared in the "Recorder" when I was in the Printing office. His Lordship's example set all the Councillors, and officials, and fashionable mad about farming and political economy. They went to Ploughing Matches—got up Fairs—made composts and bought cattle and pigs. Every fellow who wanted an office or wished to get an invitation to Government House, read Sir John Sinclair, talked of Adam Smith, bought a South Down or hired an acre of land and planted mangel wurtzels. The secret about "Agricola's" letters had been well kept and the mystery became very mysterious. At last the authorship was announced, and it was then discovered that a stout Scotchman, who kept a small grocer's shop in Water Street and whom nobody knew or had met in "good society," was the great unknown. Ovarions were got up under the patronage of the Earl; and the Judges, and leading merchants, and lawyers came forward and fraternized with the stout Sctochman, who being a man of good education and fine powers of mind, was soon discovered to speak with as much ease and fluency as he wrote. All this was marvellous in the eyes of that generation. But no two Governors think alike or patronize the same things—when Sir James Kempt came he had a passion for road making and pretty women, and the agricultural mania died away. Agricola was voted a bore—a

fat Scotchman—and his family decidedly vulgar, and the Heifers about Government House attracted more attention than the Durham Cows. The Agricultural Societies tumbled to pieces, and although spasmodic efforts were made from time to time by some members of Mr. Young's family, agriculture did not become fashionable in my day till Sir Gaspard LeMarchant in 1854 began to talk to everybody about Shanghai Chickens and Alderney Cows. Then a good deal of money was spent. The old breeds of cows, which wanted nothing but care and judicious crossing to make them as good as any in the world, were reduced in size that the cream might be made richer, which it never was, and the chickens were made twice the size with the additional recommendation that they were twice as tough. Sir Gaspard brought his crochets direct from Court, for Prince Albert was a great breeder, and the Queen and everybody else went mad about poultry for a summer or two.

## STATEMENT RELATIVE TO THE INTRODUCTION AND HISTORY OF RESPONSIBLE GOVERN- MENT IN NOVA SCOTIA.

By REV. E. M. SAUNDERS, D. D., Halifax.

Read before the Council of N. S. Historical Society, 26th Sept., 1912.

Lord Durham was appointed Governor-General of the British North American Colonies in 1838. His chief work was to settle the political strife resulting from the rebellions in Upper and Lower Canada. He recommended responsible government as the only effectual remedy.

In 1839, Charles Poulett Thompson, President of the Board of Trade was sent to the Colonies as the successor of Lord Durham. He arrived in Halifax from Quebec, on the 9th of July, 1839. The old Council of Twelve had been dissolved, and J. W. Johnstone, had been appointed to both the Legislative and Executive branches of the newly formed government.

After being sworn into office in the Provincial Building, Mr. Thompson had prolonged interviews with the leading men of both parties, Mr. Howe and Mr. Johnstone, of course, being the most important among those seen by Mr. Thompson. It became an open secret that Mr. Howe and his principal followers, Mr. Johnstone and his principal followers, had consented to unite in a coalition government.

Lord Falkland, having arrived at Halifax, made it known on the sixth of October, that he had the command from Her Majesty to admit the Attorney-General, S. G. W. Archibald, J. B. Uniacke and Joseph Howe to be members of the Executive Council. In forming the new government, the principal stipulation was that the Executive should be directly responsible to the House of Assembly. The final arrangement was that

Joseph Howe, James Boyle Uniacke and James MacNab, as Liberals, should enter the Executive Council.

In the first session after the formation of the coalition government, Mr. Howe had to fight a clique formed against him and led by William Young. The House of Assembly of which he was a member recognized the responsibility of the Cabinet to the Assembly, and voted down the "Constitutional Party." Had this party succeeded in getting a majority in the Lower House, the government would have been defeated and Mr. Young would have been called upon to form a government. In the discussion on that occasion Mr. Howe said, "In local affairs the Government was bound to carry with them the opinions of the Assembly."

Mr. Howe co-operated with Mr. Johnstone, as leader of the Government until 1843. In that year an agitation for one college for the Province, led by William Annand and supported by Mr. Howe, began, Mr. Howe still retaining his place in the Cabinet. Mr. Johnstone advised Lord Falkland to dissolve the House. This was done and a general election followed. When the House met, Mr. Johnstone had a majority of only one or two for denominational colleges. The Government held itself responsible to the Assembly. Had Mr. Howe got a majority, the Government would have resigned.

Mr. Howe, be it here noted, did not in 1843, when he was a member of the Cabinet, appeal to the people on the question of responsible government. That had been secured in 1840, three years before this time. It may here be stated that Mr. Johnstone resigned his place in the Legislative Council and was returned as a member of the Assembly for Annapolis in the general election of 1843.

In discussing the results of this election Mr. Howe said:—"I had invariably told my friends that neither the Liberals nor the Conservatives were in a condition to form a strong government of themselves." Mr. Howe and the other Liberals in the Cabinet finally went into opposition in 1843.

Mr. Johnstone continued to lead the Government from 1843 to 1847, when the term expired by the efflux of time. Mr. Howe, on the assembly of Parliament, divided the House, obtained a majority against the Government, and the Government resigned.

A new Cabinet was then formed with J. B. Uniacke, Premier. In 1854 William Young succeeded J. B. Uniacke as Premier. His Government was defeated in 1857 on the Roman Catholic quarrel and J. W. Johnstone became leader again. He in turn was defeated in the general election in 1859. Mr. Howe then formed a Government of which he became Premier. He was defeated at a general election in 1863.

Therefore, responsible government was introduced into the Nova Scotia Assembly in 1840, J. W. Johnstone leading continuously until 1847—the first Premier under responsible government in Nova Scotia. Mr. Howe led and defended the Government in the House of Assembly from 1840 to 1843.

In that time he defeated a resolution of want of confidence, both he and the Constitutionals who were opposing him, assumed in their hot debate that the Executive was responsible to the Assembly. Mr. Howe was the first leader in the Lower House to enforce the principle of responsible government. This he did in 1841.

When the House assembled after the election of 1843, the principle of the Executive's responsibility to the Lower House, was again put into operation. In the history of responsible government from the day of its introduction in 1840, until the present time, it has never been put to a severer test. A majority of one saved the Executive from defeat and barred the way of the Opposition to power.

In 1857, the principle was again applied, when William Young's Government was defeated, and Mr. Johnstone was again restored to power.

In 1859, the principle was again applied, and the Conservative Government was defeated and the Liberal Government came into power.

In 1863 the Liberal Government was defeated,, and the Conservatives came into power.

J. W. Johnstone was Premier from 1840 to 1847.

James Boyle Uniacke was Premier from 1847 to 1854.

William Young was Premier from 1854 to 1857.

J. W. Johnstone was Premier for the second time from 1857 to 1859.

Joseph Howe was Premier from 1859 to 1863.

J. W. Johnstone was Premier for the third time from 1863 to 1864.

Charles Tupper was Premier from 1864 to 1867.

Then came Confederation.

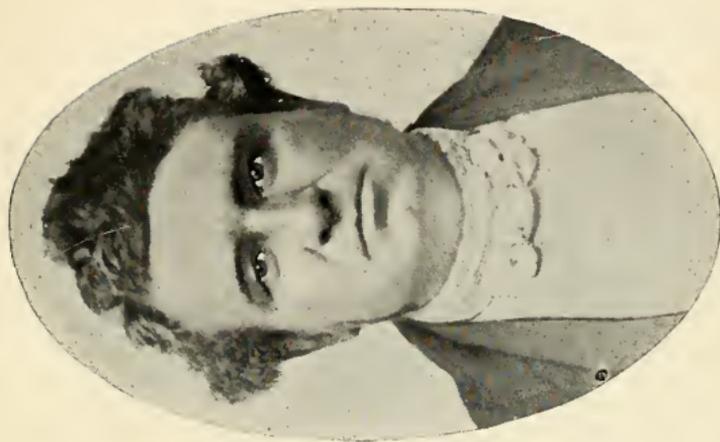
It has been thought by some that responsible government was not granted to Nova Scotia until 1847. This is incorrect, and doubtless arises from the fact that all the heads of departments were not taken into the Government until that time. Indeed this was not accomplished until about a year after the election of 1847, when J. B. Uniacke was Premier. But the principle of responsible government does not rest on the personnel of the Executive, but on the responsibility of the Executive. The application of this principle was first made by Mr. Howe, when he divided the House to test the strength of a party formed to defeat the coalition government of which he was an important member. He applied it again after the election of 1843, when he was defeated by a majority of one.

**E. M. Saunders.**

Halifax, September 14th, 1912.



**ANTHONY HOLLAND, (1785-1830)**  
Founder of the Acadian  
Recorder, 1813.  
(From a Crayon in the Provincial  
Museum.)



**H. W. BLACKADAR.**  
Whose family has been associated  
with the Acadian Recorder,  
since 1837.



**CENTENNIAL NUMBER OF "ACADIAN RECORDER."**

(Omitted from the President's Address.)

The President referred to the Centennial Number of the Acadian Recorder, published 16th January, 1913. This issue is quite unique in Canadian journalism, marking as it does the semi-centennial of the connection of the present proprietor and editor Mr. C. C. Blackadar with the paper. A most interesting feature is the reprint of the first number of the paper, as it came from the press of Anthony Holland, adjoining the Navy Victualling Office, Water St. The paper has been published ever since without interruption, which in itself furnishes a record in journalism. Since 1836 the policy of the paper has been shaped by the Blackadar family, and it is noteworthy that they lived for a long period on the site where the first newspaper in Canada was printed in 1752. The files of the Acadian Recorder contain much of the contemporary history of Nova Scotia, and are invaluable for purposes of historical research. The weekly historical article by "An Occasional" is probably the ablest and most complete contribution of historical matter provided by any paper on the American continent. It was the first paper to describe the immortal sea-fight between the Shannon and the Chesapeake, and naturally took the deepest interest in the triumphal home-coming of Lt. Provo Wallis with his valuable prize, for Mr. Blackadar like Provo Wallis was born in the Naval Yard, and steeped with its traditions. Few men have done more useful work from the historical stand-point than Mr. H. W. Blackadar our respected Postmaster.

### List of Donors to N. S. Historical Society.

---

- Academy of Pacific Coast History.  
 American Historical Association.  
*Annapolis Spectator*.  
 Archibald, Mrs. Charles.
- Boston Book Company.  
 " Record Commission.  
*Bridgetown Monitor*.
- Cady, Mrs.  
 Camden Society.  
 Canadian Antiquarian and Numismatic Society,  
 Montreal.  
 Canadian Institute.  
 Canadian Military Institute.  
 Canadian Red Cross Society.  
 Carnegie Foundation for the Advancement of Teaching.
- Chicago Historical Society.  
*Coast Guard*.  
 Connecticut Historical Society.  
 Cornell University.  
 Creed, Mrs.
- Dalhousie University.  
 Doane, H. L.  
 Durning Laurence, Sir Edwin
- Eaton, Rev. A. W. H.  
 Essex Institute.
- Flint, T. B.  
 Francklyn, Geo. E.
- General Convention Commission.  
 Gesner, Rev. A. F.

*Hants Journal.*

Harvard University.

Johns Hopkins University.

King's College.

*Lunenburg Progress.*

Lighthall, W. D.

Maine Historical Society.

MacKintosh, J. C.

MacGill University.

MacNab, Miss Ella.

Manitoba Historical Society.

Massachusetts Historical Society.

Michigan Pioneer and History Society.

Moon, J. C.

Municipal Art Society, Hartford, Conn.

Nebraska State Historical Society.

New Brunswick Natural History Society.

New England Historical and Genealogical Society.

New Hampshire Historical Society.

“ “ of Colonial Wars.

New York Bible and Common Prayer Book Society.

“ “ Historical Society.

“ “ Public Library.

“ “ State “

Newberry Library.

Nova Scotia Institute of Science.

“ “ Municipalities.

Ontario Historical Society.

Ottawa Literary and Scientific Society.

Parker, D. W.

Pennsylvania Prison Society.

Presbyterian College, Halifax.

Quebec Literary and Historical Society.  
Queens University.

Rhode Island Historical Society.  
Ritchie, James D.  
Royal Colonial Institute.  
Royal Historical Society.  
Royal Society of Canada.  
Runk, Louis B.

St. Louis Mercantile Library Association.  
St. Paul's Parish, Halifax, N. S.  
Savary, His Honour Judge  
Smithsonian Institute.  
Societe de Geography de Quebec.  
State Historian of Albany.

Ticonderoga Historical Society.  
Toronto Public Library.  
" University.

University of California.  
" " Illinois.  
" " Manitoba.  
" " North Carolina.  
" " Saskatchewan.

Uniacke, Lt.-Col. Crofton.

Vermont Historical Society.  
Vickery, Rev. E. J.

Wentworth Historical Society.  
*Westville Free Lance.*  
Wisconsin Historical Society.  
" History Commission.

## LIST OF PAPERS.

READ BEFORE THE NOVA SCOTIA HISTORICAL SOCIETY JUNE 21, 1878, TO MAY, 1913.

DATE.	TITLE.	WHENCE OBTAINED.	Published in Collections.
1878.			
June 21	Inaugural Address . . . . .	Hon. A. G. Archibald . . . . .	Vol. i. p. 18.
Sept. 5	History of St. Paul's Church. Part I . . . . .	Rev. Dr. Hill . . . . .	do. 35
Oct. 3	Autobiography of Revd. Wm. Cochran . . . . .	Rev. Dr. Cochran . . . . .	
Nov. 7	Telegraphy in Nova Scotia and neighboring Provinces . . . . .	G. E. Morton, Esq. . . . .	
1879.			
Jan. 2	Early Settlement of Shubenacadie . . . . .	Miss E. Frame . . . . .	
Mar. 6	Journal of Colonel Nicholson at Siege of Annapolis . . . . .	T. B. Akins, Esq. . . . .	Vol. i. p. 59
June 5	Translation from the French, relating to the religious beliefs of the Indians prior to the discovery by Cabot . . . . .	Robt. Morrow, Esq. . . . .	
Nov. 6	Journey to Yarmouth in 17—by Mather Byles . . . . .	Hon. Dr. Almon . . . . .	
1880.			
Feb. 5	Early Journalism in Nova Scotia . . . . .	J. J. Stewart, Esq. . . . .	Vol. vi. p. 91.
Mar. 11	History of St. Paul's Church. Pts II III . . . . .	Rev. Dr. Hill . . . . .	Vol. ii. p. 63.
Apr. 1	Governor Cornwallis and the First Council . . . . .	T. B. Akins, Esq. . . . .	Vol. ii. p. 17.
May 6	Witherspoon's Journal of the Siege of Quebec . . . . .	do. . . . .	Vol. ii. p. 31.
May 13	Walter Bromley and his labors in the cause of Education, by late John Young. (Agricola) . . . . .	J. T. Bulmer, Esq. . . . .	
June 3	Sketches of the Winniett, DeLancy, and Milledge families . . . . .	W. A. Calnek, Esq. . . . .	
Nov. 11	Revolutionary Incidents in Nova Scotia 1776-1778 . . . . .	J. T. Bulmer, Esq. . . . .	
Dec. 3	Sketch of Brook Watson, by Revd. Hugh Graham . . . . .	do. . . . .	Vol. ii. p. 135
	Brook Watson's account of the Expulsion of the Acadians . . . . .	do. . . . .	Vol. ii. p. 129.
1881.			
Jan. 6	Early History of the Dissenting Churches in Nova Scotia . . . . .	Rev. Dr. Patterson . . . . .	
	Biographical Sketch of Rev. Jas. Murdoch . . . . .	Miss E. Frame . . . . .	Vol. ii. p. 100
Feb. 3	Biographical Sketch of Alexander Howe . . . . .	W. A. Calnek, Esq. . . . .	
Mar. 14	Account of the Manners and Customs of the Acadians, with remarks on their removal from the Province; by Moses Delesdernier, 1795 . . . . .	T. B. Akins, Esq. . . . .	
Apr. 7	Letter (dated June 27, 1751) from Surveyor Morris to Governor Shirley, with a plan for the removal of the Acadians . . . . .	do. . . . .	
May 5	Extracts from the Boston News Letter, 1704-1760, and from Halifax Gazette 1752 . . . . .	Miss E. Frame . . . . .	
Sept. 1	Judge Croke (a Biography) . . . . .	Hon. Sir A. Archibald . . . . .	Vol. ii. p. 110.
Oct. 6	Chapter from the life of S G W Archibald . . . . .	Israel Longworth, Esq . . . . .	
Nov. 3	Government House . . . . .	Hon. Sir A. Archibald . . . . .	Vol. iii. p. 197
Nov. 3	Nicholas Perdue Olding, (a Biography) . . . . .	Rev. Dr. Patterson . . . . .	
Dec. 8	Petitions to the Council of Massachusetts Bay from residents of Yarmouth, and from Council of Cumberland . . . . .	T. B. Akins, Esq. . . . .	
	Proposal of Capt. John Allen as to capture of Halifax and conquest of Nova Scotia . . . . .	do. . . . .	Vol. ii. p. 11.

PAPERS READ BEFORE THE N. S. HISTORICAL SOCIETY.—(Continued.)

DATE.	TITLE.	WHENCE OBTAINED	Published in Collections.
1882.			
Jan.	5 Who was Lebel? .....	Jas. Hannay, Esq. St John, N. B. ....	
Feb.	2 Nomenclature of the Streets of Halifax ..	Rev. Dr. Hill .....	Vol. xv.
Mar.	2 A visit to Louisburg ..	P. Lynch, Esq. ....	
July	3 History of St. Paul's Church, Part IV. ....	Rev. Dr. Hill .....	Vol. iii. p. 13.
Oct.	5 Chapter in the Life of Sir John Wentworth .....	Hon. Sir A. Archibald	
Nov.	2 Edward How and his family .....	W. A. Calnek .....	
Dec.	7 M. S. Journal of Mr. Glover, Secretary of Admiral Cockburn, when conveying Napoleon to St. Helena in 1815 .....	Nepean Clarke, Esq. ....	
1883.			
Jan.	4 The Province Building .....	Hon. Sir A. Archibald	Vol. iv. p. 247.
Mar.	1 Early Reminiscences of Halifax .....	P. Lynch, Esq. ....	Vol. xvii. p. 111.
Apr.	5 The Stone Age of the Micmacs .....	Rev. Dr. Patterson ..	
May	4 Newfoundland, past, present and future ..	E. Hepple Hall, Esq. ....	
July	12 Early Life of Sir John Wentworth .....	Hon. Sir A. Archibald	
Nov.	15 Nomenclature of the streets of Halifax ..	Rev. Dr. Hill .....	
Dec.	6 Tour with General Campbell, in July and August, 1875, along the coasts of Nova Scotia, by Lieut. Booth, R. E. . . . .	T. B. Akins, Esq. ....	
1884.			
Jan.	3 Celebrated persons who have visited Nova Scotia .....	P. Lynch, Esq. ....	
Mar.	6 Ships of War wrecked on coasts of Nova Scotia and Sable Island in 18th century .....	S. D. Macdonald, Esq. ....	Vol. ix. p. 119.
May	1 Hon. S. B. Robie (a Biography) .....	Israel Longworth, Esq	
Nov.	13 Plans submitted to the British Government in 1783 by Sir Guy Carleton (1.) For the founding of a Seminary of learning at Windsor, N. S. .... (2.) For the establishment of an Episcopate in N. S. ....	T. B. Akins, Esq. ....	Vol. vi. p. 123.
Dec.	4 Samuel Vetch. 1st English Governor of Nova Scotia .....	Rev. Dr. Patterson ..	Vol. iv. p. 11.
1885.			
Feb.	5 Samuel Vetch. 1st English Governor of Nova Scotia. Part II. ....	do. ....	Vol. iv. p. 64.
Mar.	12 Exodus of the Negroes in 1791, with extracts from Clarkson's Journal .....	Hon. Sir A. Archibald	Vol. vii. p. 129.
Apr.	9 Saga of Eric the Red, with an account of the discovery of Vinland. Translated (by Capt. Ove Lange) .....	P. Jack, Esq. ....	
May	7 Early History of St. George's Church Part I-II .....	Rev. Dr. Partridge ..	Vol. vi. p. 137
Oct.	1 Old Churches of Cornwallis and Horton ..	Rev. A. W. H. Eaton.	
Nov.	5 Letters from Rev. Jacob Bailey to Rev Mather Byles .....	Hon. Dr. Almon .....	
Nov.	5 Letter from Duke of Kent to Dr. William Almon .....	Rev. Dr. Patterson ..	
Dec.	3 The League of the Iroquois .....		
1886.			
Jan.	7 Expulsion of the Acadians. Part I. ....	Hon. Sir A. Archibald	Vol. v. p. 11
Feb.	11 Method of the Acadian French in cultivating their land especially with regard to raising wheat .....	Judge Isaac DesChamps 1785 ..	
May	13 Bermuda .....	T. B. Akins, Esq. ....	
Dec.	2 Centennial Memories .....	Hon. Sir A. Archibald	
		Rev. Dr. Burns .....	

## PAPERS READ BEFORE THE N. S. HISTORICAL SOCIETY.—(Continued.)

DATE.	TITLE.	WHENCE OBTAINED.	Published in Collections.
1887.			
Jan.	14 Vinland . . . . .	Hon. L. G. Power . . . .	Vol. vii. p. 17.
Feb.	3 Early Reminiscences of Halifax, Part II.	P. Lynch, Esq. . . . .	Vol. xvii. 49-54
Mar.	3 Early Hist. of St. George's Church Pt. II.	Rev. Dr. Partridge . . .	Vol. vii. p. 73.
Mar.	16 Acadian Boundary Disputes and the Ashburton Treaty . . . . .	Judge R L Weatherbe . . .	Vol. vi. p. 17.
Apr.	7 Colonist Plants of Nova Scotia . . . . .	Dr. Geo. Lawson . . . . .	
Apr.	7 Memoir of John Clarkson, by his brother, (the celebrated) Thos. Clarkson . . . . .	Hon. Sir A. Archibald . . .	
Nov.	10 A Study of "Sam Slick" . . . . .	F. B. Crofton, Esq. . . . .	
Dec.	8 Early Journalism in Nova Scotia . . . . .	J. J. Stewart, Esq. . . . .	Vol. vi. p. 91.
1888.			
Jan.	20 Statement with reference to "French Cross" at Aylesford . . . . .	John E. Orpen, Esq. . . . .	
"	The settlement of the early Townships, Illustrated by an old census . . . . .	D. Allison, Esq. . . . .	Vol. vii. p. 45.
Feb.	24 T. C. Haliburton, Writer and Thinker . . . . .	F. B. Crofton, Esq. . . . .	
Feb.	29 The Aroostook War . . . . .	Dr. C. G. D. Roberts, . . .	
Mar.	27 Howe and his contemporaries . . . . .	Hon. J. W. Longley . . . .	
Apr.	10 The Loyalists at Shelburne . . . . .	Rev. T. W. Smith . . . . .	Vol. vi. p. 53.
Nov.	13 Photographs on Rocks at Fairy Lake . . . . .	Geo. Creed, Esq. . . . .	
Dec.	20 North West Territory and Red River Expedition . . . . .	Lt.-Col. Wainwright . . . .	
1889.			
Jan.	15 The Early Settlers of Sunbury County . . . . .	James Hannay, Esq., St. John, N. B. . . . .	
Mar.	12 Memoir of Governor Paul Mascarene . . . . .	J. Mascarene Hubbard Boston . . . . .	
Apr.	9 Legends of the Micmac Indians . . . . .	Rev. S. T. Rand . . . . .	
Nov.	12 United Empire Loyalists . . . . .	C. F. Fraser, Esq. . . . .	
Dec.	10 Inquiries into the History of the Acadian District of Pisiquid . . . . .	H. Y. Hind . . . . .	
1890.			
Feb.	13 History of Beaubasin . . . . .	Judge Morse, Amherst . . .	
Nov.	18 Early Reminiscences of Halifax, Part III	P. Lynch, Esq. . . . .	Vol. xvii.
Dec.	9 An Historical Note on "John Crowne"	Prof. A. MacMechan . . . .	
1891.			
Jan.	10 Agricola by Joe Howe . . . . .	Sydenham Howe . . . . .	
Jan.	15 Richard John Uniacke . . . . .	Hon. L. G. Power . . . . .	Vol. ix. p. 73.
Jan.	20 The Portuguese on the North East Coast of America, and the first European settlement there . . . . .	Rev. Geo. Patterson . . . .	
Mar.	20 Facts and enquiries concerning the origin and early history of Agriculture in Nova Scotia . . . . .	Prof. Geo. Lawson . . . . .	
Nov.	10 Reminiscences of Halifax, Part IV . . . . .	Peter Lynch, Esq., Q. C . . .	
1892.			
Jan.	12 Extracts from Old Boston Papers . . . . .	Miss Eliza Frame . . . . .	
Feb.	9 Hooped Cannon found at Louisburg . . . . .	Rev. Geo. Patterson D. D . . . . .	
Nov.	8 Journal kept by Rev. Dr. Mather Byles in London, 1784 . . . . .	Hon. W. J. Almon . . . . .	
Dec.	13 Chapter in History of Onslow . . . . .	Israel Longworth . . . . .	Vol. IX.

## PAPERS READ BEFORE THE N. S. HISTORICAL SOCIETY.—(Continued).

DATE.	TITLE.	WHENCE OBTAINED.	Published in Collections.
1893.			
Jan.	10 Rambles among the Leaves of my Scrap Book . . . . .	W. H. Hill . . . . .	
Feb.	14 The Log of a Halifax Privateer in 1757 . . . . .	Archd. MacMechan . . . . .	
Apr.	27 Sir William Alexander and Scottish Attempt to Colonize Acadia . . . . .	Rev. Geo. Patterson D. D. . . . .	Vol. X. p. 93.
July	28 'Royal William' Steamship . . . . .	Sir Sandford Fleming . . . . .	
Nov.	14 Voyages and Discoveries of the Cabots . . . . .	Rev. Moses Harvey . . . . .	Vol. IX.
Dec.	12 Recollect Fathers in Canada . . . . .	Geo. Patterson, M. A. . . . .	
1894.			
Feb.	13 Critical Observations on Evangeline . . . . .	F. Blake Crofton . . . . .	
Mar.	20 Origin and History of Names of Places Nova Scotia . . . . .	Rev. Geo. Patterson, D. D. . . . .	
Nov.	27 Louisburg . . . . .	J. Plimsoil Edwards . . . . .	Vol. IX.
1895.			
Jan.	22 Irish Discovery of America . . . . .	Hon. L. G. Power . . . . .	
Feb.	12 History of the Dockyard, Halifax . . . . .	Charles Stubbing . . . . .	Vol. XIII.
Mar.	12 Early Military Life in Halifax . . . . .	W. H. Hill . . . . .	
Dec.	12 Early Life in Halifax . . . . .	W. L. Brown . . . . .	Vol. XIII.
1896.			
Feb.	11 French Protestants in Nova Scotia . . . . .	Rev. G. Patterson, D. D. . . . .	
Apr.	23 Historical Gleanings . . . . .	Dr. H. Y. Hind . . . . .	
1897.			
Apr.	13 History of Wilmot and Aylesford . . . . .	Rev. E M Saunders D D . . . . .	
Nov.	9 Reminiscences of N.W. Rebellion in 1885 . . . . .	Rev D M Gordon, D. D . . . . .	
Dec.	14 Loyalist Makers of Canada . . . . .	Sir J. G. Bourinot . . . . .	
1898.			
Jan.	21 Scottish Immigrants to Cape Breton . . . . .	Mrs. Chas. Archibald . . . . .	
Feb.	17 Benj. Marsden of Marblehead . . . . .	Rev. W. O. Raymond . . . . .	
Mar.	15 Slavery in the Maritime Provinces . . . . .	Rev T W Smith, D. D. . . . .	Vol. X.
Apr.	12 Early French Missionaries at Port Royal . . . . .	Mrs. J. M. Owen . . . . .	
Nov.	8 Hist. of the Courts of Judicature of N. S. . . . .	Chf. Jus. Townshend . . . . .	
Dec.	13 History of the Law and Courts of N. S. . . . .	C. Sydney Harrington . . . . .	
1899.			
Jan.	10 Military History of Nova Scotia . . . . .	Harry Piers . . . . .	
Jan.	17 Origin of Nova Scotians . . . . .	Sir John Bourinot . . . . .	
Feb.	14 History of Education in N. S. . . . .	Dr. A. H. MacKay . . . . .	
Mar.	14 Freemasonry in Nova Scotia . . . . .	Hon. Wm. Ross . . . . .	
June	21 Hon. Edward Cornwallis . . . . .	Jas. S. Macdonald . . . . .	Vol. XII.
Nov.	16 Chancery Courts of Nova Scotia . . . . .	Chf. Jus. Townshend . . . . .	
Dec.	12 Military History of Nova Scotia. II . . . . .	Harry Piers . . . . .	
1900.			
Feb.	13 Lord Dalhousie . . . . .	Archd. MacMechan . . . . .	
Mar.	29 Benjamin Marsden . . . . .	Rev. W. O. Raymond . . . . .	
Nov.	20 Legend of Evangeline . . . . .	Rev. Dr. Brock . . . . .	
Dec.	11 The War of 1812 . . . . .	Dr. Hannay . . . . .	Vol. XI.

## PAPERS READ BEFORE THE N. S. HISTORICAL SOCIETY.—(Continued).

DATE.	TITLE.	WHENCE OBTAINED.	Published in Collections.
1901.			
Jan. 15	Governor Lawrence.....	Jas. S. Macdonald ...	Vol. XII.
Feb. 26	Capture of St. Pierre, 1795.....	Rev. T. W. Smith....	Vol. XIV.
Nov. 26	The Real Acadians.....	Archd. MacMechan...	Atlantic Monthly, Feb. 1907.
1902.			
Feb. 11	Lord Charles Greville Montague.....	E. F. Hart.....	
Mar. 12	Notes on North'n portion of Queens Co..	R. R. McLeod.....	Vol. XVI.
Nov. 25	Hon. Alex. Stewart.....	Chief Justice Sir Chas. J. Townshend.....	Vol. XV.
Dec. 9	John Cabot.....	Senator Poirier.....	
1903.			
Jan. 23	Relations and Conditions of Halifax during Revolutionary War.....	Miss Emily Weaver...	Am. Hist. Review.
Feb. 10	Hon. Joseph Howe.....	F. Blake Crofton....	
Mar. 10	Periodicals of the Maritime Provinces from the earliest Times to the Present.....	D. R. Jack, St. John... Rev. E. M. Saunders, D.D.	Acadiensis. Vol. XIII.
Apr. 14	Rev. John Wiswell and his Times.....	Prof. W. C. Murray...	Vol. XVI.
Dec. 15	History of St. Matthew's Church, Halifax.....		
1904.			
Jan. 12	Richard Bulkeley.....	Jas. S. Macdonald ...	Vol. XII.
Mar. 15	Notes on Nova Scotia Privateers.....	Geo. E. E. Nichols....	Vol. XIII.
Apr. 5	Duke of Kent.....	A. Martin Payne....	
Dec. 6	Old Time Customs.....	J. B. Calkin.....	
1905.			
Jan. 11	Account of Celebration of Ter-Centenary of DeMont's Landing at Annapolis.....	Mr. Justice Longley...	Vol. XIV.
Mar. 28	Sir Samuel Cunard.....	A. Martin Payne....	Acadiensis.
Dec. 5	Halifax in Literature.....	Archd. MacMechan...	Ap. July, 1906.
1906.			
Jan. 23	Lt.-Gov. Francklin.....	Jas. S. Macdonald ...	Vol. XVI.
Mar. 13	Sir Guy Carleton.....	Dr. Geo. Johnstone, D.C.L.	
Dec. 11	Washington Treaty, 1871.....	Mr. Justice Longley...	
1907.			
Mar. 1	Gov. Parr and the Loyalists.....	Jas. S. Macdonald....	Vol. XIV.
Apr. 9	Governor DesBarres and Sydney.....	Rev. C. W. Vernon...	
May 14	History of Beausejour.....	W. C. Milner.....	Vol. XV.
Nov. 12	Existing historic relics of the Town of Lunenburg.....	Miss Agnes Creighton	
Dec. 10	Sir Geo. Prevost.....	Jas. S. Macdonald....	
1908.			
Jan. 14	The Militia of Nova Scotia, 1749-1830	Major J. Plimeoll Edwards.....	Vol. XVII.
Feb. 25	John Young, (Agricola) the Junius of N. S.....	John Ervin.....	
Mar. 24	Letters of S.G.W. Archibald, 1800 & 1820	Judge Patterson.....	
Apr. 21	Customs of the Micmac Indians.....	H. W. Hewitt.....	
Nov. 10	Louisburg, a notable ruin.....	John S. McLennan...	A Pamphlet pub. by Society

PAPERS READ BEFORE THE N. S. HISTORICAL SOCIETY.—(Continued).

DATE.	TITLE.	WHENCE OBTAINED.	Published in Collections.
Dec. 1909.	8 Fisheries of British North America and the United States Fishermen.....	Mr. Justice Graham...	Vol. XIV.
Jan. 19	Ancestry of Chinese Gordon.....	Dr. R. C. Archibald...	
Jan. 19	Early settlers of Lunenburg.....	Rev. John Forrest, D.D.	
Mar. 9	Ancestry of the late Sir Fenwick Williams of Kars.....	Judge Savary.....	
Mar. 9	Sea Fights, gleaned from Prov. Archives	John Mullane.....	
Nov. 9	United States Loyalists.....	Theodore H. Boggs...	
Dec. 14	S. African campaign and Contingent...	H. B. Stairs.....	
1910.			
Jan. 18	Capt. Jas. Cook, R. N.....	Lt. J. A. R. Jones....	
Mar. 8	Lt. Gov. Michl. Franklin (2nd paper)	Jas. S. Macdonald....	Vol. XVI.
Apr. 12	Memorials of Grand Pre and Basin of Minas.....	Geo. Johnson, D.C.L..	
Nov. 4	Free Masonry in N. S. Part II.....	Hon. W. Ross.....	
Dec. 2	The Trent Affair.....	Geo. Johnson, D.C.L..	Vol. XVI.
1911			
Jan. 20	The Old Mail Routes and Post Roads...	E. Lawson Fenerty....	
Feb. 14	Temperance legislation for the past 100 years in Nova Scotia.....	Judge Chesley.....	
Mar. 10	Life of Hon. Judge William Blowers Bliss	Sir Chas. Townshend..	Vol. XVII.
Mar. 21	Early legislation in Nova Scotia.....	Judge Russell.....	
Nov. 3	History of the Militia of Nova Scotia, ii, 1830-1867.....	Major J. Plimsoil Ed-wards.....	Vol. XVII.
1912			
Dec. 1	The early settlers of McNab's Island, etc.	H. W. Hewitt.....	
Jan. 5	The inception of the Associated Press, etc.	John W. Regan.....	
Feb. 2	Life of Hon. James W. Johnston.....	John Y. Payzant.....	Vol. XVI.
Mar. 1	The Military Associations of Sir John Cope Sherbrooke.....	David Allison, LL.D..	
April 12	History of the N. S. Postage Stamps.....	Donald A. King.....	
May 3	Notes on the French and Pre-Revolution settlements of Shelburne County.	T. C. Lockwood, M. D.]	
1913.			
Nov.	"Old Dartmouth".....	Hon. Mr. Justice Russell	
Dec.	A Sketch of Lawrence O'Connor Dayle, a Representative of Halifax in the Early Forties.....	George Mullane.....	Vol. XVII.
Dec.	Short Historical Note on the so-called "Norse Stone," at Yarmouth.....	Moses H. Nickerson...	Vol. XVII.
Jan.	Brief Historical Note on Thomas Williams, grandfather of Sir Fenwick Williams.....	Capt. Jas. D. Ritchie..	Vol. XVII.
Jan.	An old Edition of Galen, by Laguna, 1604, in the Cogswell Library....	Prof. D. F. Fraser, M.D.	
Jan.	The Historical Method.....	Prof. J. W. Falconer..	
Feb.	Why the First Settlers came to Nova Scotia.....	Rev. John Forrest, D.D.	
Mar.	The Ancient French Cemetery near Rockingham.....	H. N. Paint.....	
Mar.	The Finding of Alexander McNutt.....	Rev. A. W. Eaton, D.C.L.	
April	Reminiscences of the House of Assembly	Hon. Mr. Justice Russell	
May	Reminiscences of a Long Life (John MacKay, Esq., New Glasgow, 1772-1884)	Rev. Allan Pollok, D.D.]	

## Index to Portraits and Illustrations.

	Page.
Unveiling Tablet marking birth place of Joseph Howe . . . .	1
Group at "Emscote" Birth place of Joseph Howe . . . . .	3
Unveiling Tablet at Pictou Academy . . . . .	9
Lt.-Col. the Hon. Richard John Uniacke . . . . .	19
Sir John Eardley Wilmot Inglis, K. C. B . . . . .	19
Major General John Charles Beckwith . . . . .	21
Colonel Joseph Frederick Wallet Desbarres . . . . .	21
Hon. Mr. Justice Bliss . . . . .	23
Residence of Hon. W. B. Bliss . . . . .	43
General Sir Fenwick Williams . . . . .	47
"Runic Stones" . . . . .	51
H. R. H. Edward Duke of Kent . . . . .	63
Gateway in Old Fort at Annapolis Royal . . . . .	73
Old Fort Annapolis Royal . . . . .	73
Stephen Hall Binney . . . . .	77
Commission of Captain Lewis Edward Piers . . . . .	79
Lt.-Col. John Bremner . . . . .	79
Gen. Sir John Coape Sherbrooke . . . . .	81
Lt.-Col. Richard Tremain . . . . .	83
Lt. Col. Richard Tremain, Jr . . . . .	83
Lt.-Col. John Albro . . . . .	85
Lt.-Colonel Thomas Ritchie . . . . .	87
Adjutant Henry Pryor . . . . .	91
Andrew Mitchell Uniacke, Esq . . . . .	93
Lt.-Col. Geo. R. Anderson and Lt.-Col. A. K. MacKinlay .	95
Adjutant J. N. Ritchie, Major B.W. Salter, Mayor Briand and Lt.-Col. James B. Oxley . . . . .	95
Lt.-Col. Andrew Kerr MacKinlay . . . . .	95
Lt.-Col. William Chearnley . . . . .	97
Capt. Edmund Montgomery H. Veith . . . . .	99
Lt.Col. William H. Creighton . . . . .	99
Lt.-Col. Richard Brown . . . . .	99

Lt.-Col. John Wimburn Laurie . . . . .	101
Lt.Col. Thomas Milsom . . . . .	101
Captain George Piers . . . . .	103
Lt. General Sir Charles Hastings Doyle . . . . .	103
Major Yorke A. W. Barrington . . . . .	105
Sydney Mines Volunteers 1866 . . . . .	105
Lt.-Col. Hon. Wm. A. Black . . . . .	105
Private Richard Lawson . . . . .	107
Private Clifford Kinnear . . . . .	107
King's Regimental Colours deposited in St. Paul's Church.	109
Adj. Gen. Col. R. Bligh Sinclair . . . . .	109
Lt.Col. J. J. Bremner . . . . .	109
Lawrence O'Connor Doyle . . . . .	151
Hon. William Annand . . . . .	153
St. Mary's Cathedral and Glebe, 1838 . . . . .	155
Hon. Herbert Huntington . . . . .	181
Hon. James MacNab . . . . .	189

## INDEX.

## A.

Acadian Recorder.....	186, 203
"Agricola".....	197
Anderson, Major.....	109
Annand, Wm.....	153, 193
Annapolis.....	74, 103, 106
Annapolis County Resolution (James Wm. Johnston) . . .	20
Annapolis Royal (Tablets).....	106
Annesley, Paymaster.....	109
Antigonish.....	107
Archibald, Hon. S. G. W.....	28, 170, 188, 199
Archibald, Mrs. Chas.....	12
Armitage, Archdeacon (Archives).....	12

## B.

Bank of Nova Scotia (Tablet).....	9
Bazalgette, Capt.....	193
Bear River, Mysterious Craft.....	14
Beckwith, General (Tablet).....	21
Bedford Basin, W. W. Walsh's Letter.....	21
Bell, Hon. Hugh.....	192
Binney, Hibbert Newton.....	160
Blackadar, Family.....	203
Bliss, Hon. W. Blowers, Memoir.....	23
Blockhouse, Old Windsor (Tablet).....	10
Blowers, Chief Justice.....	24, 28, 170
Bremner, Lieut.-Col.....	109
Bulkeley, Hon. Richard (Tablet).....	6
Burke, Bishop.....	154

## C.

Calnek's History . . . . .	47, 48
Campbell, Sir Colin . . . . .	88, 181
Cape Breton . . . . .	74, 86, 87, 161
Carleton House (Tablet) . . . . .	6
Chearnley, Lt.-Col. . . . .	96
Chester . . . . .	106
Clare . . . . .	74
"Club, The" . . . . .	169, 171
Cochran, Lt.-Col. . . . .	84
Connaught, Duke of . . . . .	1
Cornwallis . . . . .	74, 165
Cornwallis, Governor . . . . .	7, 65
Council Table, Historic (Tablet) . . . . .	7
Court House, First . . . . .	5
Crewe-Read, Lt.-Col. . . . .	101
Cumberland . . . . .	74
Curren, Lt.-Col. J. E. . . . .	109

## D.

Dalhousie, Lord . . . . .	82, 197
Daughters of the Empire, Gift . . . . .	12, 20
Dawson, Sir. Wm. (Tablet) . . . . .	8
DeBlois, Col . . . . .	83
Desbarres, Governor (Tablet) . . . . .	21
Desbarres, Hon. W. F. . . . .	192
Digby . . . . .	103, 106
Dodd, Edmund M. . . . .	185, 190
Doyle, Gen. Hastings . . . . .	102
Doyle, Lawrence O'Connor . . . . .	152
Duggan, Jas. & Son . . . . .	6

## E.

Edwards, Major J. P., Paper Militia of N. S. . . . .	63
Egan, Lt.-Col. . . . .	97
Esson, John . . . . .	193

## F.

Fairbanks, C. R. ....	28
Falkland, Lord. ....	183, 188, 199
Fenwick, Family in N. S. ....	17, 57
Forbes, Lt.-Col. ....	84

## G.

Gates, Major. ....	109
Gorham, Capt. ....	65
Gossip, Wm. ....	178
Goudge, Hon. M. H. ....	7
Gould, Lt.-Col. ....	75
Graham, Mr. Justice, Address by. ....	5
Granville, ....	106
Gregor, Dr. ....	169

## H.

Haliburton, Thos. Chandler (Sam Slick). ....	10, 169
Haliburton, Sir Brenton. ....	23, 28, 34, 127
Halifax, Reminiscences of, Peter Lynch. ....	111
Halifax, Earl of (Portrait). ....	20
Halifax, County. ....	87
Halifax, City. ....	74, 87, 100, 103, 106
Hants, ....	87
Hardy, Lt.-Col. ....	106, 107
Hopson's, 29th. ....	65
Hopson's Proclamation. ....	68
Hoffman, Dr. ....	17
Holland, Anthony. ....	203
Horton. ....	74
Howe, Joseph. ....	3, 29, 89, 153, 161, 163, 169, 188, 192, 197
Huntington, Herbert. ....	28, 153, 163, 189, 181, 192, 200

## I.

Inglis, Bishop Chas. Diaries and Journals. ....	13
Inglis, Bishop Chas. (Tablet). ....	10

Inglis, Bishop Chas. House in Halifax.....	18
Inglis, Bishop John, Diaries.....	14
Inglis Sir John (Tablet).....	20
Inverness,.....	107
Isle Madame.....	74, 157, 161, 164, 165

## J.

Jack, D. R.....	4
Jeffrey, Lt.-Col. Hon. J. N.....	82, 83, 84, 87
Johnston, Hon. Jas. Wm.....	7, 20, 186, 188, 191, 192, 199, 200

## K.

Kempt, Sir James.....	197
Kent, Duke of.....	127
Kincaid, Capt.....	169, 171, 176
Kings County.....	107
Kings College, (Tablet).....	10

## L.

Laurie, General.....	101
LeMarchant, Sir Gaspard.....	198
Liverpool.....	106
Londonderry (Tablet).....	8
Longley, Judge.....	153, 163
Loring, Lt.-Col.....	84
Lunenburg.....	74, 106

## M.

Marshall, Lt.-Col.....	84
Martell, Henry.....	188
MacCulloch, Rev. Thos. (Tablet).....	8
MacDonald, C. Ochiltree (Gift).....	12
MacDonald, Jas. D.....	4
MacKay, Dr. A. H.....	7

MacKay, John (New Glasgow) Reminiscences . . . . .	2, 17
MacKintosh, J. C. . . . .	6, 13
MacNab, Hon. Jas. (Portrait) . . . . .	20, 183, 188
MacNab, Hon. Peter (Portrait) . . . . .	20
Matthew's, St. (Mather's) Church (Tablet) . . . . .	6
McColla, Lt.-Col. . . . .	84
McGregor, Lt.-Governor . . . . .	7
McKeagney, Jas. . . . .	188
Militia of Nova Scotia . . . . .	63
Milner, W. C. (Archives) . . . . .	11
Milsom, Lt.-Col. . . . .	101
Moore, Sir John (Tablet) . . . . .	9
Moore, Sir John, Dr. Hoffman at death of . . . . .	17
Mulane, Geo. Memoir of L. O'C Doyle . . . . .	152
Mulgrave, Lord . . . . .	95, 97
Murdock, Beamish . . . . .	28
Murray, Hon. G. H., Address . . . . .	7

## N.

Nickerson, Moses H. "Runic Stone" . . . . .	51
Nova Scotian . . . . .	169

## O.

Onslow (Tablet) . . . . .	8
Oxley, Lt.-Col. . . . .	109

## P.

Paul's, St. Church . . . . .	5
Payzant, John Y. Address . . . . .	7
Peter's, St. Church . . . . .	6, 153
Pictou . . . . .	103, 106
Pictou Academy . . . . .	8
Piers, Harry—Note on Fletcher and related stones . . . . .	53
Piers, Harry, Militia . . . . .	169
Plessis, Bishop . . . . .	160

Pontac, The Great.....	6
Power, Senator.....	109
President's Report.....	1
Printing Press, First in Canada.....	3
Programme of Papers, 1912.....	13, 2

## Q.

Queens.....	74
-------------	----

## R.

Regan, J. W., Address by.....	4
Ritchie, Jas. D. Notes on Thos. Williams.....	47
Robie, Hon. S. B.....	84
Ross, Senator.....	108
Russell, Mr. Justice.....	5

## S.

Saunders, Rev. Dr. E. M.....	199
Sawyer, Lt.-Col.....	101
Savary, Judge.....	16, 17, 49
Shelburne.....	87, 106
Sherbrooke, Sir. J. C.....	80
Shubenacadie.....	106
Starr, Lt.-Col. J. Leander.....	84
Stewart, Alexander.....	28, 160
Story, William.....	120
Sinclair, Lt.-Col.....	99, 108
Somerset.....	106
Sydney.....	86
Sydney Mines.....	103

## T.

**Tablets, Historic:—**

Birth place of Joseph Howe.....	3
First Printing Press in Canada.....	4
Headquarters of General Wolfe.....	5

**Tablets, Historic**—(Continued.)

Site of First Court House.....	5
St. Paul's Church.....	5
St. Peter's Church.....	6
Old St. Matthew's Church.....	6
Residence Hon. Richard Bulkeley.....	6
The Great Pontac.....	6
Office of Jas. Wm. Johnston.....	7
Historic Council Table.....	7
Old Halifax Grammar School.....	7
Old Pictou Academy.....	8
(Sir John William Dawson).....	8
(Rev. Thos. McCulloch, D. D.).....	8
Birthplace of Sir Wm. Dawson.....	8
British Settlement of Truro, Onslow and London- derry, Col. Alex. McNutt.....	9
Quarters of Sir John Moore.....	9
Kings College, Windsor.....	10
Thomas Chandler Haliburton.....	10
The Block House, Windsor.....	10
Sir Fenwick Williams.....	11
Sir William Winniett.....	11
Thompson, James.....	33
Thomas, Lieut.....	126
Tobin, John.....	193
Tobin, Hon. Michael.....	189
Townshend, Chief Justice, Address.....	5
Townshend, Chief Justice, Memoir of Hon. W. B. Bliss.....	23
Tremaine, Lt.-Col.....	83
Truro, (Tablet).....	8, 75, 100
Tupper, Charles.....	202

**U.**

Uniacke, Rev. Fitzgerald.....	162
Uniacke, Hon. Jas. Boyle, (Portrait printed by mistake Vol. XVI.....20,) 28, 158, 161, 182, 185, 188, 192, 199	
Uniacke, Hon. Richard John.....	19, 158, 159
Uniacke, Judge.....	28, 29

## W.

Wallace, Major Ed . . . . .	84
Wallace, Provo . . . . .	21, 203
Warburton's (45th) . . . . .	65
Wentworth, Sir John . . . . .	79, 127
Wier, Lt.-Col . . . . .	106
Wier, Benjamin . . . . .	193
Wilkins, Judge . . . . .	33, 185
Wilkins, Martin I . . . . .	37, 158
Williams, Sir Fenwick . . . . .	11, 48, 49, 95, 102, 104
Williams, Thos. . . . .	47
Wilson, R. J. . . . .	7, 12
Winniett, Sir. Wm. (Tablet) . . . . .	11, 60
Windsor . . . . .	10, 74, 100, 106
Woolfe, General (Tablet) . . . . .	5, 57
Wylde, Col. J. T., Memorial of Veterans . . . . .	16, 109

## Y.

Yarmouth Runic Stone . . . . .	51
Yarmouth, Militia . . . . .	106
Young, John . . . . .	28, 153, 163
Young, William . . . . .	163, 166, 188, 192, 199
Young, G. R. . . . .	192

COLLECTIONS OF THE NOVA SCOTIA HISTORICAL  
SOCIETY.

VOL.

- I *Inaugural Proceedings. History of St. Paul's Church. (I). Journal of Colonel John Nicholson at the Capture of Annapolis. An Account of Nova Scotia in 1743. Diary of John Thomas. OUT OF PRINT.*
- II. *Proposals for Attack on Nova Scotia. The First Council. Journal of John Witherspoon. History of St. Paul's Church (II, III). Rev. James Murdock. Sir Alexander Croke. The Acadian French. OUT OF PRINT.*
- III. *History of St. Paul's Church (IV). Journal of Colonel John Winslow. Government House.*
- IV. *Hon. Samuel Vetch. Winslow's Journal at the Siege of Beausejour.*
- V. *The Expulsion of the Acadians. Gordon's Journal at the Siege of Louisburg, 1758. OUT OF PRINT.*
- VI. *Acadian Boundary Disputes and the Ashburton Treaty The Loyalists at Shelburne. Early Journalism in Nova Scotia. King's College. History of St. George's Church (I).*
- VII. *Vinland. General Return of Townships, 1767. History of St. George's Church (II). Letters relating to Harrison, Anwyl, Tutty. Deportation of Negroes to Sierra Leone.*
- VIII *History of Halifax City, by Thomas Beamish Akins.*

## VOL—

- IX. *Voyages and Discoveries of the Cabots. The Township of Onslow. Richard John Uniacke. Ships of War Lost on the Coast of Nova Scotia and Sable Island. Louisbourg;—an Historical Sketch.*
- X. *The Slave in Canada, by Rev. T. Watson Smith, D. D.*
- XI. *The War of 1812, by James Hannay.*
- XII. *Hon. Edward Cornwallis. Governor Lawrence. Richard Bulkeley, three portraits, by Jas. S. MacDonald.*
- XIII. *Rev. John Wiswall. Recollections of Old Halifax. H. M. Naval Yard, Halifax. Nova Scotian Privateers.*
- XIV. *Tercentenary Celebration of the Founding of Annapolis. The British North America Fisheries and the United States Fisherman. Capture of St. Pierre, 1793. Governor Parr with portrait and Hatchment.*
- XV. *Hon. Alex. Stewart, C. B., with portrait, by Sir Charles Townshend. Records of Chignecto, Beausejour, Maps and portraits, by W. C. Milner. Nomenclature of the Streets of Halifax with portrait, by Rev. George W Hill, D. C. L.*
- XVI. *Memoir Lieut.-Governor Michael Francklin with portraits, by James S. Macdonald. The Trent Affair with portrait, by George Johnson, D. C. L. James William Johnston, First Premier of Nova Scotia under Responsible Government with portrait, by John Y. Payzant, M. A. Notes Historical and Otherwise of the Northern District of Queens County, by R. R. McLeod, M. A. History of St. Matthew's Church, Halifax with portraits, by Prof. Walter C. Murray, M.A., LL.B. Early Reminiscences of Halifax with portraits, by Peter Lynch.*

VOL—

- XVII. *Memoir of the Life of the Honourable William Blowers Bliss, with portraits, by Hon. Sir Charles J. Townsend. Notes on Thomas Williams of Annapolis Royal, with portraits, by James D. Ritchie. A Short Note on the Yarmouth "Runic Stone," by Moses H. Nickerson. Remarks on the Fletcher and Related Stones of Yarmouth, N. S., by Harry Piers. The Fenwick Family in Nova Scotia, by Colonel G. C. Fenwick, Indian Army (retired.) The Militia of Nova Scotia, 1749-1867, with portraits, by Joseph Plimsoll Edwards. Early Reminiscences of Halifax, by Peter Lynch, Q. C. "A Sketch of Lawrence O'Connor Doyle, a Member of the House of Assembly in the Thirties and Forties," with portraits, by George Mullane. Notes on Several Governors and Their Influence, by Joseph Howe. Statement Relative to the Introduction and History of Responsible Government in Nova Scotia, by Rev. E. M. Saunders, D. D. Centennial Number of "Acadian Recorder."*















